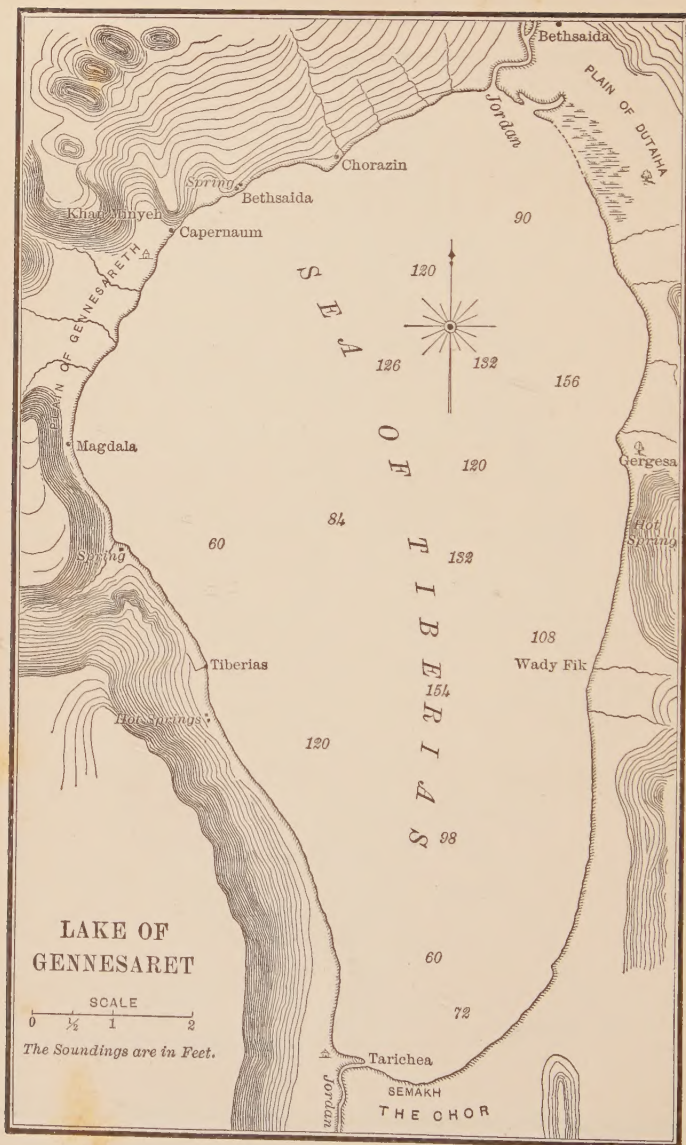


Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2023





THE
FOURFOLD GOSPEL.

THE FOUR GOSPELS, CONSOLIDATED WITHOUT ALTERATION IN A
CONTINUOUS NARRATIVE, PRESENTING THE LIFE OF CHRIST
IN THE ORDER OF ITS EVENTS. THE TEXT, ARRANGED
IN SECTIONS, TAKEN FROM "THE BIBLE
WORK," VOL. I., N. T.

BY
J. GLENTWORTH BUTLER, D.D.

NEW YORK:
THE BUTLER BIBLE-WORK COMPANY,
85 BIBLE HOUSE.

1892.

COPYRIGHT,
J. GLENTWORTH BUTLER,
1892.

MAPS, ETC.

SKETCH MAP OF GOSPEL HISTORY, . . .	}	preceding title-page.
SEA OF GALILEE,		
PROFILE SECTION OF HOLY LAND, . . .	}	last pages.
PLAIN OF GENNESARET (<i>Illustration</i>), . .		

INDEX.

SYNOPSIS OF THE HISTORY, INCLUDING TOPICS, CHAPTERS, AND	
VERSES FROM EACH GOSPEL,	pages 4-12
THE HISTORY IN 166 SECTIONS,	" 13-198
TABLE TO FIND ANY VERSE OF ANY GOSPEL,	" 200-209

THE words of the Four inspired Biographers are here woven into a single continuous narrative, giving a complete and connected view of our Lord's life and ministry. With the complete detail of every transaction, parable, and conversation, as variously recorded by two or more of the Evangelists, each event or saying will be more satisfactorily studied and better understood; the interest in the study, and the impression wrought by the clearer knowledge, will be deepened. With more vividness of reality will stand forth the sequence of events, and the different characters, motives, and utterances of persons connected with the history. And, what is of highest importance both in a critical and devotional point of view, thus only can the thread of the sacred Biography be clearly traced, the marked progress in Christ's doctrine and self-disclosure be fitly apprehended, and the silently increasing purpose of that marvellous life, with its blending of all Divine and human perfections, be fully appreciated.

For the Preacher, in study and pulpit, for the Student, the Teacher, and the Reader, and for use in Family Worship, this purely Scriptural Life of Christ will be found invaluable.

A Synopsis of the History, with Sections, Topics, Chapters, and Verses from each Gospel, precedes the Scripture Text. A Table to find any Verse of any Gospel will be found on the closing pages.

6166

NOTE.—M., L. and J. stand respectively for Matthew, Luke and John, Mk. for Mark.

SYNOPSIS OF THE HISTORY.

SECTIONS, TOPICS, CHAPTERS, AND VERSES FROM
EACH GOSPEL.

SEC- TION.	TOPICS.	MATTHEW.	MARK.	LUKE.	JOHN.	PAGE.
1	Annunciation to Zacharias.....	.....	.....	1 : 1-25	.....	13
2	Annunciation to Mary.....	.....	.....	1 : 26-38	.....	14
3	Mary visits Elisabeth.....	.....	.....	1 : 39-56	.....	15
4	Birth of John the Baptist....	.....	.....	1 : 57-80	.....	16
5	The Genealogies.....	1 : 1-17	.....	3 : 23-38	.....	17
6	The Birth at Bethlehem.....	1 : 18-25	.....	2 : 1-7	.....	19
7	The Watching Shepherds.....	.....	.....	2 : 8-20	.....	20
8	The Circumcision and Presentation.....	.....	.....	2 : 21-39	.....	21
9	Visit of the Magi.....	2 : 1-12	.....	.....	.....	22
10	Flight to and Return from Egypt.....	2 : 13-23	.....	.....	.....	23

11	With the Doctors in the Temple.....	.....	.....	2 : 40-52	24
12	Ministry of the Baptist.....	.....	1 : 1-8	3 : 1-18	25
13	Preface to John's Gospel.....	.....	.....	.....	26
14	The Baptism.....	.....	1 : 9-11	3 : 21-23	27
15	The Temptation.....	.....	1 : 12, 13	4 : 1-13	28
16	Testimony of the Baptist.....	.....	.....	.....	29
17	The First Five Disciples.....	.....	.....	1 : 19-34	30
18	The Marriage at Cana.....	.....	.....	1 : 85-51	31
19	Expels Profaners of the Temple.....	.....	.....	2 : 1-11	31
20	Discourse with Nicodemus.....	.....	.....	2 : 12-25	31
21	The Baptist imprisoned.....	.....	.....	3 : 1-21	32
22	Declares Himself to a Woman of Samaria.....	.....	6 : 17-20	3 : 22-36	33
23	Visits the Samaritans.....	.....	.....	4 : 1-26	35
24	Heals a Jewish Nobleman's Son.....	.....	.....	4 : 27-42	36
25	Preaches at Nazareth, and is rejected.....	.....	1 : 14	4 : 43-54	37
26	Dwells in Capernaum. Calls Four Fishermen.....	.....	.....	.....	38
27	Heals a Demoniac and Others.....	.....	1 : 15-20	4 : 31, 32 5 : 1-11	39
28	First Journey through Galilee.....	.....	1 : 21-34	4 : 33-41	40
29	Heals a Paralytic. Calls Matthew.....	.....	1 : 35-45	4 : 42-44 5 : 12-16	41
30	Heals the Impotent Man at Bethesda.....	.....	2 : 1-14	5 : 17-28	43
31	"My Father worketh, and I work".....	.....	.....	.....	44
				5 : 1-16	45
				5 : 17-30	45

SECTION.	TOPICS.	MATTHEW.	MARK.	LUKE.	JOHN.	PAGE.
32	Proofs of Divine Sonship				5 : 31-47	46
33	Justifies healing on the Sabbath.	12 : 1-15	{ 2 : 23-28 3 : 1-7	{ 6 : 1-11	.....	47
34	The Apostles chosen	{ 10 : 2-4 12 : 15-21	{ 3 : 7-19	6 : 12-19	.....	48
35	The Beatitudes.....	5 : 1-16	.....	6 : 20-26	.....	49
36	The Law in its Spirit. The Sixth Command.....	5 : 17-26	.....	.....	.....	50
37	The Law further explained.....	5 : 27-48	.....	6 : 27-30 32-36	.....	51
38	Almsgiving. Prayer. The Lord's Prayer.....	6 : 1-18	.....	.....	.....	53
39	Treasure. Service. Trust.	6 : 19-34	.....	.....	.....	54
40	Judge not. Ask. Enter in.....	7 : 1-20	.....	6 : 31, 37-45	.....	55
41	The Wise and the Foolish Builders	{ 7 : 21-29 8 : 1	{ 8 : 1	6 : 46-49	.....	56
42	Heals the Centurion's Servant.....	8 : 5-13	.....	7 : 1-10	.....	57
43	The Widow's Son raised. Messengers from John.....	11 : 2-6	.....	7 : 11-23	.....	58
44	Extols John, and reproves the Generation	11 : 7-19	.....	7 : 24-35	.....	59
45	Upbraids Favored Cities. Invites Heavy-laden.....	11 : 20-30	.....	.....	.....	60
46	Pharisee and Sinner. Two Debtors. Second Circuit...			{ 7 : 36-50 8 : 1-3	.....	60
47	Heals Demoniac. Charged with Blasphemy.....	12 : 22-37	3 : 19-30	11 : 14, 15 17-23	.....	62
48	Rebukes Pharisees. Disciples his Kindred.....	12 : 38-50	3 : 31-35	{ 11 : 16, 21-26 8 : 19-21	.....	63
49	Dining with Pharisees, denounces their Hypocrisy.....	.....	.....	11 : 37-54	.....	65
50	Cautions the Disciples. The Rich Fool.....	.....	.....	12 : 1-21	.....	66

TOPICS, CHAPTERS, AND VERSES.

51	Unanxious Trust in God. Watching.....	.....	.....	.....	12 : 22-40	.....	67
52	The Faithful Servant. Divisive Effects of Gospel.....	.....	.....	.....	12 : 41-59	.....	68
53	Calamities not Judgments. The Barren Fig-tree.....	.....	.....	.....	13 : 1-9	.....	69
54	The Sower. Why Christ used Parables.....	13 : 1-17	4 : 1-12	.....	8 : 4-10	.....	70
55	Explains the Parable of the Sower.....	13 : 18-23	4 : 13-25	.....	8 : 11-18	.....	71
56	The Tares, and the Interpretation.....	13 : 24-30	.....	.....	.....	.....	72
57	{ Seed growing secretly. Mustard seed. Leaven. Treas- ure. Pearl. Net.....	13 : 31-36 13 : 44-53	{ 4 : 28-34 4 : 35-41	.....	{ 8 : 22-25 9 : 57-62	.....	73
58	Unready Disciples. Stilling the Tempest.....	8 : 18-27	4 : 35-41	.....	8 : 26-40	.....	75
59	The Demoniac of Gergesa or Gadara.....	{ 8 : 28-34 9 : 1	{ 5 : 1-21 2 : 15-32	.....	5 : 29-39	.....	76
60	Matthew's Feast. Garments and Bottles.....	9 : 10-17	5 : 32-43	.....	8 : 41-56	.....	77
61	His Garment touched. The Daughter of Jairus.....	9 : 18-26	6 : 1-6	.....	.....	.....	78
62	Two Blind, etc. Again at Nazareth. Third Circuit....	{ 9 : 27-38 13 : 54-58	{ 6 : 7-11 6 : 12, 13	.....	9 : 1-5	.....	80
63	The Twelve instructed.....	10 : 1, 5-23	6 : 14-16	.....	9 : 6	.....	81
64	The Twelve, instructed, go forth.....	{ 10 : 24-42 11 : 1	{ 6 : 21-29 6 : 30-46	.....	9 : 7-9	.....	82
65	Herod holds Jesus to be the Beheaded Baptist.....	14 : 1, 2, 6-12	6 : 47-56	.....	9 : 10-17	6 : 1-15	83
66	Twelve return. Lake crossed. Five Thousand fed....	14 : 13-23	.....	.....	.....	6 : 16-21	84
67	Night-storm. Christ walks upon the Sea.....	14 : 24-36	.....	.....	.....	6 : 22-40	86
68	Christ the Bread of Life . . . . .	.....	.....	.....	.....	{ 6 : 41-71 7 : 1	87
69	Eternal Life by feeding upon Him. Defection.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	89
70	Pharisaic Traditions. Need of Inward Purity.....	15 : 1-20	7 : 1-23	.....	.....	.....	90
71	The Heathen Mother's Faith. One Deaf and Dumb.....	15 : 21-29	7 : 24-37	.....	.....	.....	92

SEC- TION.	TOPICS.	MATTHEW.	MARK.	LUKE.	JOHN.	PAGE.
72	Multitudes healed. Four Thousand fed.....	15 : 29-39	8 : 1-10	..	.....	93
73	Accuses Pharisees and cautions Disciples ..	16 : 1-12	8 : 11-21	.....	.....	94
74	Peter's Great Confession and Christ's Reply.....	16 : 13-20	8 : 22-30	9 : 18-21	.....	95
75	Peter rebuked, and Disciples urged to Self-denial.....	16 : 21-28	{ 8 : 31-38 9 : 1	{ 9 : 22-27 }	.....	96
76	The Transfiguration.....	17 : 1-13	9 : 2-13	9 : 28-36	.....	97
77	Expels a Demon which the Nine could not.....	17 : 14-21	9 : 14-30	9 : 37-43	.....	98
78	Foretells Death. The Temple Tribute.....	17 : 22-27	9 : 31-33	9 : 43-45	.....	99
79	Ambition rebuked. The Little Child ..	18 : 1-9	9 : 33-50	9 : 46-50	.....	100
80	Tenderness toward Disciples. Offences among them...	18 : 10-20	.....	.....	.....	101
81	How to forgive. The Unmerciful Servant	{ 18 : 21-35 19 : 1	.....	.....	.....	102
82	Instructs and sends out the Seventy .....	.....	.....	10 : 1-16	.....	103
83	Leaves Galilee. Samaritans refuse. Ten Lepers.....	.....	.....	{ 9 : 51-56 17 : 11 19	{ 7 : 2-10 }	104
84	Feast of Tabernacles. Officers sent to take Him.....	.....	.....	.....	7 : 11-36	105
85	Invitation on the Great Feast-day. Officers return. ....	.....	.....	.....	7 : 37-53	107
86	Woman and her Accusers. Light of the World.....	.....	.....	.....	8 : 1-20	107
87	Severe Denunciation of the Jews.....	.....	.....	.....	8 : 21-47	109
88	The Jews attempt to stone Him.....	.....	.....	.....	8 : 48-59	110
89	The Seventy return. The Good Samaritan.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	111
90	Martha and Mary. How to pray.....	.....	.....	{ 10 : 17-37 10 : 38-42 11 : 1-13	.....	112

91	Sight to one born blind. The Jews' Inquiry.....	.....	.....	9 : 1-23	113
92	The Man cast out, and found by Christ .....	.....	.....	9 : 24-38	114
93	The Only Door into the Fold of God.....	.....	.....	9 : 39-41 10 : 1-10	115
94	The Good Shepherd.....	.....	.....	10 : 11-21	116
95	Feast of Dedication. Charged with Blasphemy.....	.....	.....	10 : 22-42	117
96	Delays after Death of Lazarus .....	.....	.....	11 : 1-16	118
97	"I am the Resurrection and the Life" .....	.....	.....	11 : 17-31	118
98	Raises Lazarus from the Grave.....	.....	.....	11 : 32-46	119
99	The Council conspire against Jesus.....	.....	.....	11 : 47-54	120
100	An Infirm Woman healed.....	19 : 1, 2	10 : 1	13 : 10-21	121
101	Entrance into the Kingdom. Message to Herod.....	.....	.....	13 : 22-35	122
102	Dropsy healed on the Sabbath. Humility.....	.....	.....	14 : 1-14	123
103	The Great Supper. Counting the Cost.....	.....	.....	14 : 15-35	124
104	The Lost Sheep. The Lost Coin.....	.....	.....	15 : 1-10	125
105	The Lost Son.....	.....	.....	15 : 11-32	126
106	The Unjust Steward.....	.....	.....	16 : 1-18	127
107	The Rich Man and Lazarus.....	.....	.....	16 : 19-31	128
108	A Forgiving, Believing, and Serving Spirit.....	.....	.....	17 : 1-10	129
109	Destruction of the Jewish State.....	.....	.....	17 : 30-37	130
110	Importunate Widow. Pharisee and Publican.....	.....	.....	18 : 1-14	131
111	Divorce and Marriage. Little Children blessed.....	19 : 8-15	10 : 2-16	18 : 15-17	132

SECTION.	TOPICS.	MATTHEW.	MARK.	LUKE.	JOHN.	PAGE.
112	The Rich Young Ruler. Peter's Selfish Question.....	19 : 16-30	10 : 17-31	18 : 18-30	.....	133
113	The Laborers in the Vineyard.....	20 : 1-16	.....	.....	.....	134
114	The Last Journey. Serving greater than ruling.....	20 : 17-28	10 : 32-45	18 : 31-34	.....	135
115	Barthimæus. Zaccheus.....	20 : 29-34	10 : 46-52	{ 18 : 35-43 19 : 1-10	.....	136
116	The Pounds.....	.....	.....	19 : 11-28	.....	138
117	The Anointing by Mary.....	26 : 6-13	14 : 3-9	.....	{ 11 : 55-57 12 : 1-11	139
118	Public Entry into Jerusalem.	21 : 1-9	11 : 1-10	19 : 29-40	12 : 12-19	140
119	Weeps over the City. The Fig-tree cursed	21 : 10, 11 14-19	{ 11 : 11-14	19 : 41-44	.....	141
120	Cleansing of Temple. Lesson of Withered Tree.	21 : 12-13 20-22	{ 11 : 15-26	{ 19 : 45-48 21 : 37-38	.....	142
121	His Authority questioned. The Two Sons.....	21 : 23-32	{ 11 : 27-33 12 : 1	{ 20 : 1-9	.....	143
122	The Faithless Husbandmen.....	21 : 33-46	12 : 1-12	20 : 9-19	.....	144
123	The Marriage-Feast and Wedding Garment.....	22 : 1-14	.....	.....	.....	146
124	Question about the Tribute-Money.....	22 : 15-22	12 : 13-17	20 : 20-26	.....	147
125	Question concerning the Resurrection.....	22 : 23-33	12 : 18-27	20 : 27-29	.....	147
126	The Scribe's Question. Christ's Question.....	22 : 34-46	12 : 28-37	20 : 40-44	.....	148
127	Fearful Denunciations against Pharisees and Scribes...	23 : 1-39	12 : 38-40	20 : 45-47	.....	149
128	Widow's Gift. Seeking Greeks. Voice from Heaven..	.....	12 : 41-44	21 : 1-4	12 : 20-26	151
129	Reflections on the Unbelief of the Jews.....	.....	.....	.....	12 : 37-50	153
130	Destruction of Jerusalem foretold.....	24 : 1-14	13 : 1-13	21 : 5-19	.....	153

131	Signs of Coming Destruction.....	24 : 15-36	13 : 14-32	21 : 20-33	155
132	Transition to Christ's Final Coming. "Watch".....	24 : 37-51	13 : 33-37	21 : 34-36	157
133	The Ten Virgins.....	25 : 1-13	.....	.....	158
134	The Talents.....	25 : 14-30	.....	.....	158
135	Description of the Judgment.....	25 : 31-46	.....	.....	160
136	Covenant with Judas. Preparation for the Passover.....	26 : 1-5 14-19	{ 14 : 1, 2 10-16	{ 22 : 1-13	161
137	The Passover Meal. Washes the Disciples' Feet.....	26 : 20	14 : 17	22 : 14-18 24-27	162
138	"One of you shall betray me".....	26 : 21-25	14 : 18-21	22 : 21-23 28-30	163
139	Foretells Peter's Denial and Dispersion of All.....	26 : 31-35	14 : 27-31	22 : 31-38	164
140	The Lord's Supper Instituted.....	26 : 26-29	14 : 22-25	22 : 19, 20	166
141	Last Discourse—"Let not your Heart be troubled".....	.....	.....	.....	166
142	" " "Another Comforter".....	.....	.....	14 : 1-14	166
143	" " Christ the Vine. Abiding.....	.....	.....	14 : 15-31	167
144	" " Mutual Love.....	.....	.....	15 : 1-11	168
145	" " Persecution. Office of the Spirit.....	.....	.....	15 : 12-27	169
146	" " "Ask in my Name".....	.....	.....	16 : 1-15	170
147	The Prayer for his Own.....	.....	.....	16 : 16-33	171
148	The Prayer for their Sanctification and Oneness.....	.....	.....	17 : 1-13	172
149	The Agony in Gethsemane.....	26 : 30, 36-46	14 : 26, 32-42	17 : 13-36	173
150	The Betrayal and Apprehension.....	26 : 47-56	14 : 43-52	18 : 1	174
151	Led to Annas. Peter's Denial.....	26 : 58, 69-75	14 : 54, 66-72	18 : 2-12 13-18 23-27	175 177

SEC- TION.	TOPICS.	MATTHEW.	MARK.	LUKE.	JOHN.	PAGE.
152	Examined and condemned by the Sanhedrim.....	26 : 57,59-68	14 : 53,55-65	22 : 63-71	18 : 19-24	178
153	Death of Judas. Jesus brought before Pilate.....	27 : 1-14	15 : 1-5	23 : 1-5	18 : 28-38	179
154	Before Herod, and Pilate again. Barabbas preferred...	27 : 15-26	15 : 6-15	23 : 6-25	18 : 39, 40.	181
155	Scourged, mocked, and delivered up.....	27 : 29-30	15 : 15-19	.. .. .	19 : 1-16	183
156	Led away and crucified.. .. .	27 : 31-34,38	15 : 20-23 25, 27, 28	23 : 26-34	19 : 16-18	184
157	The Parted Garments. The Title. The Malefactors....	35-37 27 : 39-41	15 : 24, 26 29, 32	23 : 34-43	19 : 19, 24	185
158	"Behold thy Son." Noon-day Darkness. "Finished."	27 : 45-56	15 : 33-41	23 : 44-49	19 : 25-30	186
159	His Side pierced. His Body laid in the Sepulchre.....	27 : 57-66	15 : 42-47	23 : 50-56	19 : 31-42	187
160	The Empty Sepulchre. The Angel's Message.....	28 : 1-8	16 : 1-8	24 : 1-8, 12	20 : 1-10	189
161	With Mary and the Women. Disbelief of Disciples....	28 : 9-15	16 : 9-11	24 : 9-11	20 : 11-18	191
162	Walk to Emmaus with Two Disciples.....	.....	16 : 12, 13	24 : 13-35	.....	192
163	Meets the Eleven, and again a Week later.....	.....	16 : 14-19	24 : 36-43	20 : 19-29	193
164	At the Sea of Tiberias. "Lovest thou me?".....	.....	.....	.....	21 : 1-24	195
165	With the Eleven in Galilee and at Jerusalem.....	28 : 16-20	1 Cor. 15 : 6, 7	24 : 44-49	Acts 1 : 3-5, 8	196
166	Ascension. Close of the Gospel.... ..	Acts 1 : 9-12	16 : 19, 20	24 : 50-53	{ 20 : 30, 31 21 : 25	197

THE HISTORY OF CHRIST,

AS RECORDED BY THE EVANGELISTS.

Section 1.

Luke's Preface. Annunciation to Zacharias.

LUKE 1 : 1-25.

1 FORASMUCH as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely believed among us, even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning were eyewitnesses, and ministers of the word ; it seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus, that thou mightest know the certainty of those things wherein thou hast been instructed.

5 THERE was in the days of Herod, the king of Judea, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abia : and his wife *was* 6 of the daughters of Aaron, and her name *was* Elisabeth. And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless. And they had no child, because that Elisabeth was barren, and they both were *now* well stricken in years.

8 And it came to pass, that, while he executed the priest's office before God in the order of his course, according to the custom of the priest's office, his lot was to burn incense when he went into the temple of the Lord. And the whole multitude of the people were praying without, at the time of incense.

11 And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord standing on the right side of the altar of incense. And when Zacharias saw

- 13 *him*, he was troubled, and fear fell upon him. But the angel said
unto him, Fear not, Zacharias : for thy prayer is heard ; and thy
wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name
14 John. And thou shalt have joy and gladness, and many shall re-
15 joice at his birth. For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord,
and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink ; and he shall be
16 filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb. And
many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God.
17 And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to
turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient
to the wisdom of the just ; to make ready a people prepared for
the Lord.
- 18 And Zacharias said unto the angel, Whereby shall I know this ?
19 for I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years. And
the angel answering, said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in
the presence of God ; and am sent to speak unto thee, and to show
20 thee these glad tidings. And behold, thou shalt be dumb, and
not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be per-
formed, because thou believest not my words, which shall be ful-
filled in their season.
- 21 And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he
22 tarried so long in the temple. And when he came out he could
not speak unto them : and they perceived that he had seen a vis-
ion in the temple : for he beckoned unto them, and remained
speechless.
- 23 And it came to pass, that as soon as the days of his ministration
24 were accomplished, he departed to his own house. And after
those days his wife Elisabeth conceived, and hid herself five
25 months, saying, Thus hath the Lord dealt with me in the days
wherein he looked on me, to take away my reproach among men.

Section 2.

Annunciation to Mary.

LUKE 1 : 26-38.

- 26 AND in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from
27 God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, to a virgin es-

poused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David ;
 28 and the virgin's name *was* Mary. And the angel came in unto
 her, and said, Hail, *thou that art* highly favoured, the Lord *is* with
 29 thee : blessed *art* thou among women. And when she saw *him*,
 she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her mind what manner
 of salutation this should be.

30 And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary : for thou hast
 31 found favour with God. And behold, thou shalt conceive in thy
 32 womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name JESUS. He
 shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest ; and the
 33 Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David : and
 he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever ; and of his king-
 dom there shall be no end.

34 Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I
 35 know not a man ? And the angel answered and said unto her, The
 Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest
 shall overshadow thee : therefore also that holy thing which shall
 36 be born *of thee*, shall be called the Son of God. And behold, thy
 cousin Elisabeth, she hath also conceived a son in her old age ;
 37 and this is the sixth month with her who was called barren. For
 with God nothing shall be impossible.

38 And Mary said, Behold the handmaid of the Lord ; be it unto
 me according to thy word. And the angel departed from her.

Section 3.

Mary visits Elisabeth.

LUKE 1 : 39-56.

39 AND Mary arose in those days, and went into the hill coun-
 40 try with haste, into a city of Juda, and entered into the house
 41 of Zacharias, and saluted Elisabeth. And it came to pass,
 that when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe
 leaped in her womb : and Elisabeth was filled with the Holy
 42 Ghost. And she spake out with a loud voice and said, Blessed
 43 *art* thou among women, and blessed *is* the fruit of thy womb. And
 whence *is* this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come to
 44 me ? For lo, as soon as the voice of thy salutation sounded in my

45 ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy. And blessed is she that believeth : for there shall be a performance of those things which were told her from the Lord.

46, 47 And Mary said, My soul doth magnify the Lord, and my
48 spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour. For he hath regarded the low estate of his handmaiden : for behold, from henceforth all
49 generations shall call me blessed. For he that is mighty hath
50 done to me great things ; and holy is his name. And his mercy
51 is on them that fear him, from generation to generation. He hath shewed strength with his arm ; he hath scattered the proud in the
52 imagination of their hearts. He hath put down the mighty from
53 their seats, and exalted them of low degree. He hath filled the hungry with good things, and the rich he hath sent empty away.
54 He hath holpen his servant Israel, in remembrance of *his* mercy ;
55 as he spake to our fathers, to Abraham, and to his seed, for ever.
56 And Mary abode with her about three months, and returned to her own house.

Section 4.

Birth of John the Baptist.

LUKE 1 : 57-80.

57 Now Elisabeth's full time came that she should be delivered ;
58 and she brought forth a son. And her neighbours and her cousins heard how the Lord had shewed great mercy upon her ; and they rejoiced with her.

59 And it came to pass, that on the eighth day they came to circumcise the child ; and they called him Zacharias, after the name
60 of his father. And his mother answered and said, Not so ; but he
61 shall be called John. And they said unto her, There is none of
62 thy kindred that is called by this name. And they made signs to
63 his father, how he would have him called. And he asked for a writing table, and wrote, saying, His name is John. And they
64 marvelled all. And his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue loosed, and he spake, and praised God.

65 • And fear came on all that dwelt round about them : and all these sayings were noised abroad throughout all the hill country
66 of Judea. And all they that heard *them*, laid *them* up in their

hearts, saying, What manner of child shall this be ! And the hand of the Lord was with him.

67 And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost, and
68 prophesied, saying, Blessed be the Lord God of Israel ; for he
69 hath visited and redeemed his people, and hath raised up an horn
70 of salvation for us, in the house of his servant David : as he spake
by the mouth of his holy prophets, which have been since the
71 world began : that we should be saved from our enemies, and from
72 the hand of all that hate us ; to perform the mercy *promised* to our
73 fathers, and to remember his holy covenant ; the oath which he
74 sware to our father Abraham, that he would grant unto us, that
we, being delivered out of the hand of our enemies, might serve
75 him without fear, in holiness and righteousness before him, all the
days of our life.

76 And thou, child, shalt be called the prophet of the Highest, for
thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to prepare his ways ;
77 to give knowledge of salvation unto his people, by the remission
78 of their sins, through the tender mercy of our God : whereby the
79 dayspring from on high hath visited us, to give light to them that
sit in darkness and in the shadow of death, to guide our feet into
the way of peace.

80 And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the
deserts till the day of his showing unto Israel.

Section 5.

**The Genealogies: from Abraham, by Matthew; and from Adam,
by Luke.**

MATTHEW 1 : 1-17. LUKE 3 : 23-38.

M. 1 THE book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David,
the son of Abraham.

2 Abraham begat Isaac : and Isaac begat Jacob : and Jacob begat
3 Judas and his brethren ; and Judas begat Phares and Zara of
4 Thamar ; and Phares begat Esrom ; and Esrom begat Aram ; and
Aram begat Aminadab ; and Aminadab begat Naasson ; and Naas-
5 son begat Salmon ; and Salmon begat Booz of Rachab ; and Booz

6 begat Obed of Ruth ; and Obed begat Jesse ; and Jesse begat David the king ;

And David the king begat Solomon of her *that had been the wife* 7 of Urias ; and Solomon begat Roboam ; and Roboam begat Abia ; 8 and Abia begat Asa ; and Asa begat Josaphat ; and Josaphat begat 9 Joram ; and Joram begat Ozias ; and Ozias begat Joatham ; and 10 Joatham begat Achaz ; and Achaz begat Ezekias ; and Ezekias begat Manasses ; and Manasses begat Amon ; and Amon begat Jo- 11 sias ; and Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon.

12 And after they were brought to Babylon, Jechonias begat 13 Salathiel ; and Salathiel begat Zorobabel ; and Zorobabel begat 14 Abiud ; and Abiud begat Eliakim ; and Eliakim begat Azor ; and Azor begat Sadoc ; and Sadoc begat Achim ; and Achim begat 15 Eliud ; and Eliud begat Eleazar ; and Eleazar begat Matthan ; 16 and Matthan begat Jacob ; and Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.

17 So all the generations from Abraham to David *are* fourteen generations ; and from David until the carrying away into Babylon *are* fourteen generations ; and from the carrying away into Babylon unto Christ *are* fourteen generations.

L. 23 And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was *the son* of Heli, 24 which was *the son* of Matthat, which was *the son* of Levi, which was *the son* of Melchi, which was *the son* of Jaana, which was 25 *the son* of Joseph, which was *the son* of Mattathias, which was *the son* of Amos, which was *the son* of Naum, which was *the son* of Esli, 26 which was *the son* of Nagge, which was *the son* of Maath, which was *the son* of Mattathias, which was *the son* of Semei, which was *the son* 27 of Joseph, which was *the son* of Juda, which was *the son* of Joanna, which was *the son* of Rbesa, which was *the son* of Zerobabel, which 28 was *the son* of Salathiel, which was *the son* of Neri, which was *the son* of Melchi, which was *the son* of Addi, which was *the son* of Cosam, which was *the son* of Elmodam, which was *the son* of Er, 29 which was *the son* of Jose, which was *the son* of Eliezer, which was *the son* of Jorim, which was *the son* of Matthat, which was *the son* 30 of Levi, which was *the son* of Simeon, which was *the son* of Juda, which was *the son* of Joseph, which was *the son* of Jonan, which 31 was *the son* of Eliakim, which was *the son* of Melea, which was *the son* of Menan, which was *the son* of Mattatha, which was *the son* of 32 Nathan, which was *the son* of David, which was *the son* of Jesse,

which was *the son* of Obed, which was *the son* of Booz, which was
 33 *the son* of Salmon, which was *the son* of Naasson, which was *the son*
 of Aminadab, which was *the son* of Aram, which was *the son* of
 Esrom, which was *the son* of Pharez, which was *the son* of Juda,
 34 which was *the son* of Jacob, which was *the son* of Isaac, which was
the son of Abraham, which was *the son* of Thara, which was *the son*
 35 of Nachor, which was *the son* of Saruch, which was *the son* of
 Ragau, which was *the son* of Phalec, which was *the son* of Heber,
 36 which was *the son* of Sala, which was *the son* of Cainan, which was
the son of Arphaxad, which was *the son* of Sem, which was *the son*
 37 of Noe, which was *the son* of Lamech, which was *the son* of Ma-
 thusala, which was *the son* of Enoch, which was *the son* of Jared,
 38 which was *the son* of Maleleel, which was *the son* of Cainan, which
 was *the son* of Enos, which was *the son* of Seth, which was *the son*
 of Adam, which was *the son* of God.

Section 6.

The Birth at Bethlehem.

MATTHEW 1 : 18-25. LUKE 2 : 1-7.

M. 18 Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise : When
 as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they
 came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost.
 19 Then Joseph her husband, being a just *man*, and not willing to
 make her a public example, was minded to put her away privily.
 20 But while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the
 Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of
 David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife : for that which is
 21 conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost. And she shall bring forth a
 son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS : for he shall save his peo-
 22 ple from their sins. Now all this was done, that it might be ful-
 23 filled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, Be-
 hold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and
 they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is,
 God with us.
 24 Then Joseph, being raised from sleep, did as the angel of the
 25 Lord had bidden him, and took unto him his wife : and knew her

not till she had brought forth her firstborn son : and he called his name JESUS.

L. 1 And it came to pass in those days, that there went out a decree from Cæsar Augustus, that all the world should be
2 taxed. (And this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was governor of Syria.) And all went to be taxed, every one into his own city.

4 And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judea, unto the city of David, which is called Bethlehem (because he was of the house and lineage of David,) to be
5 taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with child. And so it was, that while they were there, the days were accomplished
6 that she should be delivered. And she brought forth her firstborn son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger, because there was no room for them in the inn.

Section 7.

The Watching Shepherds.

LUKE 2 : 8-20.

8 And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in
9 the field, keeping watch over their flock by night. And lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord
10 shone round about them ; and they were sore afraid. And the angel said unto them, Fear not : for, behold, I bring you good
11 tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day, in the city of David, a Saviour, which is Christ
12 the Lord. And this *shall be* a sign unto you ; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger.

13 And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the
14 heavenly host praising God, and saying, Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good-will toward men.

15 And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass,
16 which the Lord hath made known unto us. And they came with

haste, and found Mary, and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger. And when they had seen *it*, they made known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this child. And all they that heard *it*, wondered at those things which were told them by the shepherds. But Mary kept all these things, and pondered *them* in her heart. And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, as it was told unto them.

Section 8.

The Circumcision, Naming, and Presentation in the Temple.

LUKE 2 : 21-39.

- 21 AND when eight days were accomplished for the circumcising of the child, his name was called JESUS, which was so named of the angel before he was conceived in the womb.
- 22 And when the days of her purification according to the law of Moses were accomplished, they brought him to Jerusalem, to present *him* to the Lord ; (as it is written in the law of the Lord, Every male that openeth the womb shall be called holy to the Lord ;) and to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in the law of the Lord, A pair of turtledoves, or two young pigeons.
- 23 And behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name *was* Simeon ; and the same man *was* just and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel : and the Holy Ghost was upon him. And it was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lord's Christ. And he came by the Spirit into the temple ; and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custom of the law, then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God, and said, Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, according to thy word : for mine eyes have seen thy salvation, which thou hast prepared before the face of all people ; a light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.
- 33 And Joseph and his mother marvelled at those things which were spoken of him. And Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary his mother, Behold, this child is set for the fall and rising

- again of many in Israel ; and for a sign which shall be spoken
35 against ; (yea, a sword shall pierce through thy own soul also ;) that
the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed.
- 36 And there was one Anna, a prophetess, the daughter of Phan-
uel, of the tribe of Aser : she was of a great age, and had lived
37 with an husband seven years from her virginity : and she *was* a
widow of about fourscore and four years, which departed not
from the temple, but served *God* with fastings and prayers night
38 and day. And she coming in that instant, gave thanks likewise
unto the Lord, and spake of him to all them that looked for
redemption in Jerusalem.
- 39 And when they had performed all things according to the law
of the Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their own city Nazareth.
-

Section 9.

Wise Men, from the Far East, pay Homage to Christ.

MATTHEW 2 : 1-12.

- 1 Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea in the days
of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to
2 Jerusalem, saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews?
for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship
him.
- 3 When Herod the king had heard *these things* he was troubled,
4 and all Jerusalem with him. And when he had gathered all the
chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of
5 them where Christ should be born. And they said unto him, In
6 Bethlehem of Judea : for thus it is written by the prophet, And
thou, Bethlehem, in the land of Juda, art not the least among the
princes of Juda ; for out of thee shall come a Governor, that shall
rule my people Israel.
- 7 Then Herod, when he had privily called the wise men, inquired
8 of them diligently what time the star appeared. And he sent them
to Bethlehem, and said, Go and search diligently for the young
child ; and when ye have found *him*, bring me word again, that I
9 may come and worship him also. When they had heard the king,
they departed ; and, lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went

before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was.
 10 When they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy.
 11 And when they were come into the house, they saw the young
 child with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him :
 and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto
 12 him gifts ; gold, and frankincense, and myrrh. And being warned
 of God in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they de-
 parted into their own country another way.

Section 10.

Flight into Egypt. Herod's Cruelty. Return to Nazareth.

MATTHEW 2 : 13-23.

13 AND when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord
 appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the
 young child, and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou
 there until I bring thee word : for Herod will seek the young child
 14 to destroy him. When he arose, he took the young child and his
 15 mother by night, and departed into Egypt : and was there until
 the death of Herod : that it might be fulfilled which was spoken
 of the Lord by the prophet, saying, Out of Egypt have I called
 my son.
 16 Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men,
 was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children
 that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two
 years old and under, according to the time which he had diligent-
 17 ly inquired of the wise men. Then was fulfilled that which was
 18 spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, In Rama was there a voice
 heard, lamentation and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel
 weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because
 they are not.
 19 But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord ap-
 20 peareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, saying, Arise, and take
 the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel :
 21 for they are dead which sought the young child's life. And he
 arose, and took the young child and his mother, and came into
 22 the land of Israel. But when he heard that Archelaus did reign

in Judea, in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither : notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dream, he
 23 turned aside into the parts of Galilee : and he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene.

Section 11.

As a Child questions with the Doctors in the Temple.

Jerusalem.

LUKE 2 : 40-52.

40 AND the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom : and the grace of God was upon him.
 41 Now his parents went to Jerusalem every year at the feast of
 42 the passover. And when he was twelve years old, they went up
 43 to Jerusalem after the custom of the feast. And when they had fulfilled the days, as they returned, the child Jesus tarried behind
 44 in Jerusalem ; and Joseph and his mother knew not of it. But they, supposing him to have been in the company, went a day's journey ; and they sought him among *their* kinsfolk and acquaint-
 45 ance. And when they found him not, they turned back again to Jerusalem, seeking him.
 46 And it came to pass, that after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, both hearing them,
 47 and asking them questions. And all that heard him were astonished at his understanding and answers. And when they saw him, they were amazed : and his mother said unto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us ? behold thy father and I have sought thee
 49 sorrowing. And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me ? wist ye not that I must be about my Father's business ? And they understood not the saying which he spake unto them.
 51 And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subject unto them : but his mother kept all these sayings in her
 52 heart. And Jesus increased in wisdom and in stature, and in favour with God and man.

Section 12.

Ministry of John the Baptist.

MATTHEW 3 : 1-12. MARK 1 : 1-8. LUKE 3 : 1-18.

Mk. 1 THE beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God.

L. 1 Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Cæsar, Pontius Pilate being Governor of Judea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip, tetrarch of Iturea, and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias, the tetrarch of Abilene, **2** Annas and Caiaphas being the high priests, the word of God came unto John the Baptist, the son of Zacharias, in the wilderness of **3** Judea. And in those days he came into all the country about Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins ; and saying, Repent ye : for the kingdom of heaven is at **4** hand. As it is written in the prophets, Behold I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. For this is he that was spoken of in the book of the words of Esaias, the prophet, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight. **5** Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be brought low ; and the crooked shall be made straight, and the **6** rough ways shall be made smooth ; and all flesh shall see the salvation of God. **M. 4** And the same John had his raiment of camel's hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins, and his meat was locusts and wild honey.

5 Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all the land of Judea, **6** and all the region round about Jordan, and were all baptized of him in the river of Jordan, confessing their sins.

7 But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, *and* to the multitude that came forth to be baptized of him, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come? **L. 8** Bring forth therefore fruits worthy of repentance ; and begin not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to *our* father : for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees : every tree therefore which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down and cast into the fire.

10 And the people asked him, saying, What shall we do then?

- 11 He answereth, and saith unto them, He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none ; and he that hath meat, let him do likewise. Then came also publicans to be baptized, and said unto him, Master, what shall we do ? And he said unto them, Exact no more than that which is appointed you. And the soldiers likewise demanded of him, saying, And what shall we do ? And he said unto them, Do violence to no man, neither accuse any falsely, and be content with your wages.
- 15 And as the people were in expectation, and all *men* mused in their hearts of John, whether he were the Christ or not ; John answered, saying unto them all, I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance ; but one cometh after me mightier than I, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to stoop down and unloose, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear ; he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire : whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and will gather the wheat into his garner ; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.
- 18 And many other things in *his* exhortation preached he unto the people.

Section 13.

Preface to John's Gospel.

JOHN 1 : 1-14.

- 1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.
- 2, 3 The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him ; and without him was not anything made that was made. In him was life : and the life was the light of men. And the light shineth in darkness ; and the darkness comprehended it not.
- 6, 7. There was a man, sent from God, whose name *was* John. The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all *men* through him might believe. He was not that Light, but *was sent* to bear witness of that Light.
- 9 *That* was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world. He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not. He came unto his own, and

- 12 his own received him not. But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, *even* to them that believe on his name : which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.
- 14 And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father) full of grace and truth.

Section 14.

The Baptism. The Baptist's Witness.

The Jordan.

MATTHEW 3 : 13 to end. MARK 1 : 9-11. LUKE 3 : 21-23. JOHN 1 : 15-18.

- M. 13 AND it came to pass in those days when all the people were baptized, that Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee to Jordan
- 14 unto John, to be baptized of him. But John forbade him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me ?
- 15 And Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer *it to be so* now : for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered
- 16 him. And he was baptized of John in Jordan. And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water. And praying, lo, he saw the heavens opened unto him, and the Spirit of God descending in a bodily shape like a dove, and lighting
- 17 upon him. And lo, a voice came from heaven, which said, Thou art my beloved Son, in thee I am well pleased: **L. 23** And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age.
- J. 15 John bare witness of him, and cried, saying, This was he of whom I spake, He that cometh after me is preferred before me ; for he was before me And of his fulness have all we
- 16 received, and grace for grace. For the law was given by Moses,
- 18 *but* grace and truth came by Jesus Christ. No man hath seen God at any time ; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared *him*.

Section 15.

The Temptation.

Wilderness of Judea.

MATTHEW 4 : 1-11. LUKE 4 : 1-13. MARK 1 : 12, 13.

- L. 1 AND Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost, returned from Jordan, and immediately was led by the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil. And he was there in the wilderness with the wild beasts, being forty days tempted of Satan.
- 2 And in those days he did eat nothing. ¶. 2 And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterwards an hungered.
- 3 And when the tempter, the devil, came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread.
- 4 But Jesus answered him and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.
- 5 Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, and setteth
- 6 him on a pinnacle of the temple, and saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down from hence : for it is written, He shall give his angels charge concerning thee, to keep thee ; and in *their* hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou
- 7 dash thy foot against a stone. And Jesus answering, said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.
- 8 Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the
- 9 glory of them, in a moment of time. And the devil said unto him, All these things, all this power will I give thee, and the glory of them ; for that is delivered unto me, and to whomsoever I will, I give it. If thou therefore wilt fall down and worship me,
- 10 all shall be thine. Then answered Jesus and said unto him, Get thee hence, behind me, Satan : for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.
- 11 Then when the devil had ended the temptation, he leaveth him, and departed from him for a season. And behold, angels came and ministered unto him.

Section 16.

Testimony of the Baptist.

Bethabara. Jordan Valley.

JOHN 1 : 19-34.

19 AND this is the record of John, when the Jews sent priests
20 and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him, Who art thou? And
he confessed, and denied not; but confessed, I am not the
21 Christ. And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And
he saith, I am not. Art thou that prophet? And he answered,
22 No. Then said they unto him, Who art thou? that we may give
23 an answer to them that sent us. What sayest thou of thyself? He
said, I *am* the voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make straight
the way of the Lord, as said the prophet Esaias.

24, 25 And they which were sent were of the Pharisees. And they
asked him, and said unto him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou
26 be not that Christ, nor Elias, neither that prophet? John an-
swered them, saying, I baptize with water: but there standeth
27 one among you, whom ye know not; he it is, who coming after
me, is preferred before me, whose shoe's latchet I am not worthy
28 to unloose. These things were done in Bethabara beyond Jordan,
where John was baptizing.

29 The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith,
Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world!
30 This is he of whom I said, After me cometh a man which is pre-
31 ferred before me; for he was before me. And I knew him not;
but that he should be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I
come baptizing with water.

32 And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from
33 heaven like a dove, and it abode upon him. And I knew him
not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said
unto me, Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending and
remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the Holy
34 Ghost. And I saw and bare record that this is the Son of God.

Section 17.

The First Five Disciples.

Jordan Valley and Galilee.

JOHN 1 : 35-51.

35 AGAIN the next day after, John stood, and two of his disciples ;
36 and looking upon Jesus as he walked, he saith, Behold the Lamb
37 of God ! And the two disciples heard him speak, and they fol-
38 lowed Jesus. Then Jesus turned, and saw them following, and
saith unto them, What seek ye ? They said unto him, Rabbi,
(which is to say, being interpreted, Master,) where dwellest thou ?
39 He saith unto them, Come and see. They came and saw where
he dwelt, and abode with him that day : for it was about the
tenth hour.

40 One of the two which heard John *speak*, and followed him, was
41 Andrew, Simon Peter's brother. He first findeth his own brother
Simon, and saith unto him, We have found the Messias ; which
42 is, being interpreted, the Christ. And he brought him to Jesus.
And when Jesus beheld him, he said, Thou art Simon the son of
Jona : thou shalt be called Cephas ; which is, by interpretation,
a stone.

43 The day following Jesus would go forth into Galilee, and find-
44 eth Philip, and saith unto him, Follow me. Now Philip was of
45 Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter. Philip findeth Nathan-
ael, and saith unto him, We have found him of whom Moses in the
law, and the prophets, did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of
46 Joseph. And Nathanael said unto him, Can there any good thing
come out of Nazareth ? Philip saith unto him, Come and see.

47 Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and saith of him, Behold
48 an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile ! Nathanael saith unto
him, Whence knowest thou me ? Jesus answered and said unto
him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast under the
49 fig-tree, I saw thee. Nathanael answered and saith unto him,
50 Rabbi, thou art the Son of God, thou art the King of Israel. Je-
sus answered and said unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw
thee under the fig tree, believest thou ? thou shalt see greater
51 things than these. And he saith unto him, Verily, verily, I say
unto you, Hereafter you shall see heaven open, and the angels of
God ascending and descending upon the Son of man.

Section 18.

The Marriage at Cana.

Galilee.

JOHN 2 : 1-11.

- 1 AND the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee,
2 and the mother of Jesus was there. And both Jesus was called
3 and his disciples, to the marriage. And when they wanted wine,
4 the mother of Jesus saith unto him, They have no wine. Je-
sus saith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine
5 hour is not yet come. His mother saith unto the servants, What-
soever he saith unto you, do *it*.
6 And there were set there six water-pots of stone, after the man-
ner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins
7 apiece. Jesus saith unto them, Fill the water-pots with water.
8 And they filled them up to the brim. And he saith unto them,
Draw out now, and bare unto the governor of the feast. And they
9 bare *it*. When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was
made wine, and knew not whence it was, (but the servants which
drew the water knew,) the governor of the feast called the bride-
10 groom, and saith unto him, Every man at the beginning doth set
forth good wine; and when men have well drunk, then that
which is worse: *but* thou hast kept the good wine until now.
11 This beginning of miracles did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and
manifested forth his glory; and his disciples believed on him.
-

Section 19.

At the First Passover, expels Profaners of the Temple.

Jerusalem.

JOHN 2 : 12-25.

- 12 AFTER this he went down to Capernaum, he, and his mother,
and his brethren, and his disciples; and they continued there
not many days.

13 And the Jews' passover was at hand, and Jesus went up to Je-
 14 rusalem, and found in the temple those that sold oxen, and sheep,
 15 and doves, and the changers of money, sitting : and when he had
 made a scourge of small cords, he drove them all out of the tem-
 ple, and the sheep, and the oxen ; and poured out the changers'
 16 money, and overthrew the tables ; and said unto them that sold
 doves, Take these things hence, make not my Father's house an
 17 house of merchandise. And his disciples remembered that it was
 written, The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up.

18 Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, What sign shew-
 19 est thou unto us, seeing that thou doest these things? Jesus an-
 swered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three
 20 days I will raise it up. Then said the Jews, Forty and six years
 was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three
 21, 22 days? But he spake of the temple of his body. When there-
 fore he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he
 had said this unto them : and they believed the scripture, and the
 word which Jesus had said.

23 Now when he was in Jerusalem at the passover, in the feast day,
 many believed in his name, when they saw the miracles which he
 24 did. But Jesus did not commit himself unto them, because he
 25 knew all men, and needed not that any should testify of man :
 for he knew what was in man.

Section 20.

Discourse with Nicodemus.

Jerusalem.

JOHN 3 : 1-21.

1 THERE was a man of the Pharisees named Nicodemus, a ruler
 2 of the Jews : the same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him,
 Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God : for no
 man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with
 3 him. Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say
 unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the king-
 dom of God.

4 Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he
 is old? Can he enter the second time into his mother's womb,

5 and be born? Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee,
 Except a man be born of water, and *of* the Spirit, he cannot enter
 6 into the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh, is
 7 flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit, is spirit. Marvel not
 8 that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again. The wind bloweth
 where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst
 not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one
 that is born of the Spirit.

9 Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things
 10 be? Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou a master of Is-
 11 rael, and knowest not these things? Verily, verily, I say unto
 thee, We speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen;
 12 and ye receive not our witness. If I have told you earthly things,
 and ye believe not, how shall ye believe if I tell you *of* heavenly
 13 things? And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that
 came down from heaven, *even* the Son of man which is in heaven.
 14 And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must
 15 the Son of man be lifted up: that whosoever believeth in him
 should not perish, but have eternal life.

16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only-begotten Son
 that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have ever-
 17 lasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn
 18 the world, but that the world through him might be saved. He
 that believeth on him, is not condemned: but he that believeth
 not, is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the
 19 name of the only-begotten Son of God. And this is the condem-
 nation, that light is to come into the world, and men loved dark-
 20 ness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. For every
 one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light,
 21 lest his deeds should be reprov'd. But he that doeth truth,
 cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that
 they are wrought in God.

Section 21.

The Baptist's Last Testimony. Imprisoned by Herod.

MATTHEW 14:3-5. MARK 6:17-20. LUKE 3:19, 20. JOHN 3:22-36.

J. 22 AFTER these things came Jesus and his disciples into the land
 23 of Judea; and there he tarried with them, and baptized. And

- John also was baptizing in Enon near to Salim, because there was much water there : and they came, and were baptized. For John was not yet cast into prison.
- Then there arose a question between *some* of John's disciples and the Jews, about purifying. And they came unto John, and said unto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou bearest witness, behold, the same baptizeth, and all *men* come to him. John answered and said, A man can receive nothing, except it be given him from heaven. Ye yourselves bear me witness, that I said, I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him. He that hath the bride is the bridegroom : but the friend of the bridegroom, which standeth and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly because of the bridegroom's voice : this my joy therefore is fulfilled. He must increase, but I *must* decrease.
- He that cometh from above is above all : he that is of the earth is earthly, and speaketh of the earth : he that cometh from heaven is above all. And what he hath seen and heard, that he testifieth ; and no man receiveth his testimony. He that hath received his testimony, hath set to his seal that God is true. For he whom God hath sent, speaketh the words of God : for God giveth not the Spirit by measure *unto him*. The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand. He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life : and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life : but the wrath of God abideth on him.
- L. 19 But Herod the tetrarch, being reproved by John for Herodias his brother Philip's wife, and for all the evils which Herod had done, added yet this above all, that he shut up John in prison. **Mk.** 17 For Herod himself had sent forth, and laid hold upon John, and bound him, and put him in prison for Herodias' sake : for he had married her. For John had said unto Herod, It is not lawful for thee to have thy brother's wife. Therefore Herodias had a quarrel against him, and would have killed him ; but she could not : for Herod feared John, knowing that he was a just man and an holy, and observed him : and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly. **M.** 5 And when he would have put him to death, he feared the multitude, because they counted him as a prophet.

Section 22.

To a Woman of Samaria declares himself the Messiah.

Sychar, or Shechem.

JOHN 4 : 1-26.

- 1 WHEN therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had heard
2 that Jesus made and baptized more disciples than John, (though
3 Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples,) he left Judea, and
4 departed again into Galilee. And he must needs go through
5 Samaria. Then cometh he to a city of Samaria, which is called
6 Sychar, near to the parcel of ground that Jacob gave to his son
7 Joseph. Now Jacob's well was there. Jesus therefore being
8 wearied with his journey, sat thus on the well : and it was about
9 the sixth hour.
- 7 There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water : Jesus saith
8 unto her, Give me to drink. (For his disciples were gone away
9 unto the city to buy meat.) Then saith the woman of Samaria
10 unto him, How is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me,
11 which am a woman of Samaria? for the Jews have no dealings
12 with the Samaritans. Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou
13 knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith unto thee, Give
14 me to drink ; thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would
15 have given thee living water. The woman saith unto him, Sir,
16 thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep : from whence
17 then hast thou that living water ? Art thou greater than our father
18 Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his
19 children, and his cattle ? Jesus answered and said unto her,
20 Whosoever drinketh of this water, shall thirst again : but whoso-
ever drinketh of the water that I shall give him, shall never thirst :
but the water that I shall give him, shall be in him a well of water
springing up into everlasting life. The woman saith unto him,
Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to
draw.
- 16 Jesus saith unto her, Go call thy husband, and come hither.
17 The woman answered and said, I have no husband. Jesus said
18 unto her, Thou hast well said, I have no husband : for thou hast
19 had five husbands, and he whom thou now hast, is not thy hus-
band : in that saidst thou truly. The woman saith unto him, Sir,
20 I perceive that thou art a prophet. Our fathers worshipped in

this mountain ; and ye say, that in Jerusalem is the place where
 21 men ought to worship. Jesus saith unto her, Woman, believe me,
 the hour cometh, when ye shall neither in this mountain. nor yet
 22 at Jerusalem, worship the Father. Ye worship ye know not what :
 23 we know what we worship : for salvation is of the Jews. But the
 hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship
 the Father in spirit and in truth : for the Father seeketh such to
 24 worship him. God *is* a Spirit : and they that worship him, must
 worship *him* in spirit and in truth.

25 The woman saith unto him, I know that Messias cometh, which
 26 is called Christ : when he is come, he will tell us all things. Je-
 sus saith unto her, I that speak unto thee am *he*.

Section 23.

Visits the Samaritans.

Sychar, or Shechem.

JOHN 4 : 27-42.

27 AND upon this came his disciples, and marvelled that he talked
 with the woman : yet no man said, What seekest thou ? or, Why
 28 talkest thou with her ? The woman then left her water-pot, and
 29 went her way into the city, and saith to the men, Come, see a man
 which told me all things that ever I did : is not this the Christ ?
 30 Then they went out of the city, and came unto him.

31 In the mean while his disciples prayed him, saying, Master,
 32 eat. But he said unto them, I have meat to eat that ye know not
 33 of. Therefore said the disciples one to another, Hath any man
 brought him *ought* to eat ?

34 Jesus saith unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that
 35 sent me, and to finish his work. Say not ye, There are yet four
 months, and *then* cometh harvest ? Behold, I say unto you, Lift
 up your eyes, and look on the fields ; for they are white already
 36 to harvest. And he that reapeth receiveth wages, and gathereth
 fruit unto life eternal : that both he that soweth, and he that reap-
 37 eth, may rejoice together. And herein is that saying true, One
 38 soweth, and another reapeth. I sent you to reap that whereon ye

bestowed no labour : other men laboured, and ye are entered into their labours.

39 And many of the Samaritans of that city believed on him for the saying of the woman, which testified, He told me all that ever
40 I did. So when the Samaritans were come unto him, they besought him that he would tarry with them : and he abode there
41 two days. And many more believed, because of his own word ;
42 and said unto the woman, Now we believe, not because of thy saying : for we have heard *him* ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.

Section 24.

Heals a Jewish Nobleman's Son

Cana.

MATTHEW 4 : 12. MARK 1 : 14. JOHN 4 : 43-54.

J. 43 Now after two days Jesus departed thence. And when he had heard that John was cast into prison, he came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God. For Jesus himself testified, that a prophet hath no honour in his own country. Then when he was come into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having seen all the things that he did at Jerusalem at the feast : for they
44 also went unto the feast. So Jesus came again into Cana of Galilee, where he made the water wine.

47 And there was a certain nobleman, whose son was sick at Capernaum. When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judea into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought him that he would come down and heal his son : for he was at the point of death.
48 Then said Jesus unto him, Except ye see signs and wonders, ye
49 will not believe. The nobleman saith unto him, Sir, come down ere my child die. Jesus saith unto him, Go thy way ; thy son liveth. And the man believed the word that Jesus had spoken unto him, and he went his way.

51 And as he was now going down, his servants met him, and told
52 *him*, saying, Thy son liveth. Then inquired he of them the hour when he began to amend. And they said unto him, Yesterday at
53 the seventh hour the fever left him. So the father knew that it

was at the same hour, in the which Jesus said unto him, Thy son liveth ; and himself believed, and his whole house.

54 This *is* again the second miracle *that* Jesus did, when he was come out of Judea into Galilee.

Section 25.

Preaches at Nazareth, and is rejected.

LUKE 4 : 14-30.

14 AND Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee : and there went out a fame of him through all the region round
15 about. And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all.
16 And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up. And, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath day,
17 and stood up for to read. And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written,

18 The Spirit of the Lord *is* upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor ; he hath sent me to heal the broken-hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised,
19, 20 to preach the acceptable year of the Lord. And he closed the book, and he gave *it* again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him.

21 And he began to say unto them, This day is the Scripture fulfilled in your ears. And all bare him witness, and wondered at
22 the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Joseph's son ? And he said unto them, Ye will surely say unto me this proverb, Physician, heal thyself : whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also here in thy coun-
24 try. And he said, Verily I say unto you, No prophet is accepted
25 in his own country. But I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elias, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when great famine was throughout all the
26 land ; but unto none of them was Elias sent, save unto Sarepta,
27 a city of Sidon, unto a woman *that was* a widow. And many lepers

were in Israel in the time of Eliseus the prophet ; and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian.

28 And all they in the synagogue, when they heard these things
29 were filled with wrath, and rose up, and thrust him out of the
city, and led him unto the brow of the hill, (whereon their city
30 was built,) that they might cast him down headlong. But he,
passing through the midst of them, went his way.

Section 26.

Dwells in Capernaum. Calls Four Fishermen. Draught of Fishes.

MATTHEW 4 : 13-22. MARK 1 : 15-20. LUKE 4 : 31, 32 ; 5 : 1-11.

M. 13 AND leaving Nazareth, he came down to and dwelt in Capernaum, a city of Galilee, which is upon the sea coast, in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim : that it might be fulfilled which
14 was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthalim *by* the way of the sea beyond Jordan,
15 Galilee of the Gentiles : the people which sat in darkness saw great light, and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death, light is sprung up.

17 From that time Jesus began to preach the gospel of the kingdom of God, and to say, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand : Repent ye, and believe the gospel. **L.** 31 And
32 he taught them on the sabbath-days. And they were astonished at his doctrine : for his word was with power.

Mk. 16 Now as Jesus walked by the sea of Galilee, he saw two brethren, Simon, called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into
17 the sea : for they were fishers. And Jesus said unto them, Come
18 ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men. And
19 straightway they forsook their nets, and followed him. And when he had gone a little farther thence, he saw other two brethren, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also were in
20 the ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets. And straightway he called them : and they immediately left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants, and went after him.

- L. 1 And it came to pass, that as the people pressed upon him to
 2 hear the word of God, he stood by the lake of Gennesaret, and
 saw two ships standing by the lake : but the fishermen were gone
 3 out of them, and were washing *their* nets. And he entered into
 one of the ships, which was Simon's, and prayed him that he
 would thrust out a little from the land. And he sat down, and
 taught the people out of the ship.
 4 Now when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Launch
 5 out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught. And
 Simon answering said unto him, Master, we have toiled all the
 night, and have taken nothing : nevertheless at thy word I will
 6 let down the net. And when they had this done, they inclosed a
 7 great multitude of fishes : and their net brake. And they beckoned
 unto *their* partners, which were in the other ship, that they should
 come and help them. And they came, and filled both the ships,
 8 so that they began to sink. When Simon Peter saw *it*, he fell
 down at Jesus' knees, saying, Depart from me : for I am a sinful
 9 man, O Lord. For he was astonished, and all that were with him,
 10 at the draught of the fishes which they had taken : and so *was*
 also James, and John, the sons of Zebedee, which were partners
 with Simon. And Jesus said unto Simon, Fear not ; from hence-
 11 forth thou shalt catch men. And when they had brought their
 ships to land, they forsook all, and followed him.

Section 27.

Heals a Demoniac, Peter's Wife's Mother, and Others.

Capernaum.

MATTHEW 8 : 14-17. MARK 1 : 21-34. LUKE 4 : 33-41.

- Mk. 21 And they went into Capernaum ; and straightway on the sab-
 22 bath-day he entered into the synagogue, and taught. And they
 were astonished at his doctrine : for he taught them as one that
 had authority, and not as the scribes ; and his word was with
 power.
 L. 33 And in the synagogue there was a man, which had a spirit of an
 34 unclean devil, and cried out with a loud voice, saying, Let *us* alone ;
 what have we to do with thee, Jesus of Nazareth ? art thou come to

35 destroy us? I know thee who thou art; the Holy One of God. And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the unclean spirit had torn him, and thrown him in the midst, and cried with a loud voice, he came out of him, and hurt him not. **Mk.** 27 And they were all amazed, insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, What thing, what a word is this? What new doctrine is this? for with authority and power he commandeth even the unclean spirits, and they do obey him, and

28 come out. And immediately his fame spread abroad throughout all the region, into every place of the country round about Galilee.

29 And forthwith when they were come out of the synagogue, they entered into the house of Simon Peter and Andrew, with James

30 and John. And Simon's wife's mother lay sick of a great fever :

31 and anon they tell him of her, and besought him for her. And he came, and stood over her, and rebuked the fever; and took her by the hand, and lifted her up. And immediately the fever left her; and she arose, and ministered unto them.

32 And at even, when the sun did set, all they that had any sick with divers diseases brought them unto him; and they brought

33 unto him many that were possessed with devils. And all the city

34 was gathered together at the door. And, cast out with *his* word, devils also came out of many, crying out, and saying, Thou art Christ the Son of God. And he rebuking *them* suffered not the devils to speak, because they knew him, that he was Christ. And he laid his hands on every one of them that were sick of divers diseases, and healed them : **M.** 17 that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Himself took *our* infirmities, and bare *our* sicknesses.

Section 28.

First Journey through Galilee. Heals a Leper.

MATTHEW 4 : 23-25 ; 8 : 2-4. MARK 1 : 35-45. LUKE 4 : 42-44 ;
5 : 12-16.

Mk. 35 AND in the morning rising up a great while before day, he went out and departed into a solitary desert place, and there prayed,

36 And Simon, and they that were with him, followed after him.
 37 And when they had found him, they said unto him, All *men* seek
 38 for thee. And he said unto them, Let us go into the next towns,
 that I may preach there also. And the people sought him, and
 came unto him and stayed him that he should not depart from
 them. And he said unto them, I must preach the kingdom of God
 39 to other cities also : for therefore came I forth. And he preached
 in the synagogues of Galilee, and cast out devils.

M. 23 And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues,
 and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner
 24 of sickness, and all manner of disease among the people. And
 his fame went throughout all Syria : and they brought unto him
 all sick people that were taken with divers diseases and torments,
 and those which were possessed with devils, and those which
 were lunatic and those that had the palsy ; and he healed them.
 25 And there followed him great multitudes of people from Galilee,
 and from Decapolis, and from Jerusalem, and from Judea, and from
 beyond Jordan.

L. 12 And it came to pass, when he was in a certain city, behold, a
 man full of leprosy ; who seeing Jesus, came to him, beseeching
 him ; and kneeling down fell on *his* face and worshipped him,
 saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. Mk. 41
 And Jesus, moved with compassion, put forth *his* hand, and
 42 touched him, saying, I will ; be thou clean. And as soon as he
 had spoken, immediately the leprosy departed from him, and he
 43 was cleansed. And he straitly charged him, and forthwith sent
 44 him away ; and saith unto him, See thou say nothing to any man ;
 but go thy way, shew thyself to the priest, and offer for thy
 cleansing the gift that Moses commanded, for a testimony unto
 45 them. But he went out, and began to publish *it* much, and to
 blaze abroad the matter, insomuch that Jesus could no more open-
 ly enter into the city, but was without in desert places. L. 15
 And so much the more went there a fame abroad of him : and
 great multitudes came together from every quarter, to hear and to
 be healed by him of their infirmities.

16 And he withdrew himself into the wilderness, and prayed.

Section 29.

Heals a Paralytic. Calls Matthew.

Capernaum.

MATTHEW 9 : 2-9. MARK 2 : 1-14. LUKE 5 : 17-23.

Mk. 1 AND it came to pass on a certain day that again he entered into Capernaum, after *some* days ; and it was noised that he was in
2 the house. And straightway many were gathered together, inso-much that there was no room to receive *them*, not so much as about the door : and he preached the word unto them.

L. 17 And as he was teaching, there were Pharisees and doctors of the law sitting by, which were come out of every town of Galilee, and Judea, and Jerusalem : and the power of the Lord was *present*
18 to heal them. And behold, men come unto him bringing a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed which was borne of four. And
19 they sought to bring him in, and to lay *him* before him. And when they could not come nigh unto him for the press, nor find by what *way* they might bring him in because of the multitude, they went upon the housetop, uncovered the roof where he was, and when they had broken it up, they let him down through the tiling with
20 *his* couch, into the midst before Jesus. And when he saw their faith, he said unto the sick of the palsy, Son, be of good cheer, thy sins are forgiven thee.

21 And behold, certain of the scribes and Pharisees sitting there began to reason within themselves, saying, Who is this which blasphemeth ? Why doth this man thus speak blasphemies ? Who can forgive sins but God alone ? **Mk.** 8 And immediately, when Jesus perceived in his spirit that they so reasoned within themselves, answering their thoughts he said unto them, Why reason ye these things ? Wherefore think ye evil in your
9 hearts ? For whether is it easier, to say to the sick of the palsy, Thy sins be forgiven thee, or to say, Arise, and take up thy
10 bed, and walk ? But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power upon earth to forgive sins, (then saith he to the sick of the
11 palsy,) I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy bed, and go thy
12 way into thine house. And immediately he rose up before them, took up the bed whereon he lay, went forth before them all, and departed to his own house, glorifying God. But when the multitude saw *it*, they were all amazed. and glorified God, which had

given such power unto men ; and they were filled with fear, saying, We never saw it on this fashion ; we have seen strange things to-day.

- 13 And after these things he went forth again by the sea *side*, and
 14 all the multitude resorted unto him, and he taught them. And as he passed by, he saw a publican, named Matthew or Levi, *the son* of Alphens, sitting at the receipt of custom : and he said unto him, Follow me. And he left all, rose up, and followed him.

Section 30.

Heals the Impotent Man at Bethesda.

Jerusalem.

JOHN 5 : 1-16.

- 1 AFTER this there was a feast of the Jews : and Jesus went up to
 2 Jerasalem. Now there is at Jerusalem, by the sheep *market*, a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue, Bethesda, having five
 3 porches. In these lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blind,
 4 halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water. For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water : whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in, was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.
 5 And a certain man was there, which had an infirmity thirty and
 6 eight years. When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time *in that case*, he saith unto him, Wilt thou be made
 7 whole? The impotent man answered him, Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool : but while I
 8 am coming, another steppeth down before me. Jesus saith unto
 9 him, Rise, take up thy bed, and walk. And immediately the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked : and on the
 10 same day was the sabbath. The Jews therefore said unto him that was cured, It is the sabbath day ; it is not lawful for thee to
 11 carry *thy* bed. He answered them, He that made me whole, the
 12 same said unto me, Take up thy bed, and walk. Then asked they him, What man is that which said unto thee, Take up thy bed,
 13 and walk? And he that was healed wist not who it was : for Jesus had conveyed himself away, a multitude being in *that* place.

- 14 Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him,
Behold, thou art made whole : sin no more, lest a worse thing
15 come unto thee. The man departed, and told the Jews that it
16 was Jesus which had made him whole. And therefore did the
Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay him, because he had
done these things on the sabbath-day.

Section 31.

"My Father worketh, and I work."

Jerusalem.

JOHN 5 : 17-30.

- 17 But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I
18 work. Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, because
he not only had broken the sabbath, but said also, that God was
his Father, making himself equal with God.
- 19 Then answered Jesus, and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say
unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth
the Father do : for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth
20 the Son likewise. For the Father loveth the Son, and showeth
him all things that himself doeth : and he will show him greater
21 works than these, that ye may marvel. For as the Father raiseth
up the dead, and quickeneth *them* ; even so the Son quickeneth
22 whom he will. For the Father judgeth no man ; but hath com-
23 mitted all judgment unto the Son : that all *men* should honour
the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not
the Son honoureth not the Father which hath sent him.
- 24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and be-
lieveth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not
come into condemnation ; but is passed from death unto life.
- 25 Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is,
when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God : and they
26 that hear shall live. For as the Father hath life in himself, so
27 hath he given to the Son to have life in himself ; and hath given
him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of
28 man. Marvel not at this : for the hour is coming, in the which
29 all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, and shall come

forth ; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life ;
 and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.
 30 I can of mine own self do nothing : as I hear, I judge : and my
 judgment is just ; because I seek not mine own will, but the will
 of the Father which hath sent me.

Section 32.

Proofs of His Divine Sonship.

Jerusalem.

JOHN 5 : 31-47.

31, 32 If I bear witness of myself, my witness is not true. There is
 another that beareth witness of me, and I know that the witness
 33 which he witnesseth of me is true. Ye sent unto John, and he
 34 bare witness unto the truth. But I receive not testimony from
 35 man ; but these things I say, that ye might be saved. He was a
 burning and a shining light : and ye were willing for a season to
 36 rejoice in his light. But I have a greater witness than *that* of
 John : for the works which the Father hath given me to finish,
 the same works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father
 37 hath sent me. And the Father himself which hath sent me, hath
 borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time,
 38 nor seen his shape. And ye have not his word abiding in you :
 39 for whom he hath sent, him ye believe not. Search the scrip-
 tures ; for in them ye think ye have eternal life : and they are they
 which testify of me.
 40, 41 And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life. I receive
 42 not honour from men. But I know you, that ye have not the love
 43 of God in you. I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive
 me not : if another shall come in his own name, him ye will re-
 44 ceive. How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another,
 45 and seek not the honour that *cometh* from God only ? Do not
 think that I will accuse you to the Father : there is *one* that ac-
 46 cusethe you, *even* Moses, in whom ye trust. For had ye believed
 47 Moses, ye would have believed me : for he wrote of me. But if
 ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words ?

Section 33.

Justifies plucking of Corn, and healing, on the Sabbath.

Galilee.

MATTHEW 12 : 1-15. LUKE 6 : 1-11. MARK 2 : 23-28 ; 3 : 1-7.

- L. 1 AND it came to pass on the second sabbath after the first, that he went through the corn-fields : and his disciples were an hungered, and began, as they went, to pluck the ears of corn, and
 2 did eat, rubbing *them in their hands*. But when the Pharisees saw *it*, they said unto him, Behold, thy disciples do that which is not lawful to do on the sabbath-day. And certain of the Pharisees
 3 said unto them, Why do ye that which is not lawful? And Jesus answering them, said, Have ye never read so much as this, what David did, when he had need and was an hungered, he and they
 4 that were with him ; how he went into the house of God in the days of Abiathar the high-priest, and did take and eat the shew-bread, and gave also to them that were with him ; which was not lawful for him to eat, neither for them which were with him, but only for the priests? **M.** 5 Or have ye not read in the law how that on the sabbath-days the priests in the temple profane the sab-
 6 bath, and are blameless? But I say unto you, that in this place is
 7 *one* greater than the temple. But if ye had known what *this* meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltless. **Mk.** 27 And he said unto them, The
 28 sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath : therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.
- L. 6 And it came to pass also on another sabbath, when he was departed thence, that he entered into the synagogue and taught : and behold, there was a man there whose right hand was
 7 withered. And the scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal on the sabbath-day : and they asked him, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath-days? that they might find an
 8 accusation against him. But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Rise up, and stand forth
 9 in the midst. And he arose and stood forth. Then said Jesus unto them, I will ask you one thing : Is it lawful on the sabbath-days to do good, or to do evil? to save life, or to destroy *it*? But they held their peace. **M.** 11 And he said unto them, What man shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep, and if it fall

into a pit on the sabbath-day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift *it* 12 out? How much then is a man better than a sheep? wherefore it is lawful to do well on the sabbath-days.

Mk. 5 And when he had look'd round about upon them all with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts, he saith unto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched *it* forth; and his hand was restored whole, like as the other.

6 Then the Pharisees were filled with madness, and went out, and communed one with another what they might do to Jesus. And straightway they took counsel with the Herodians against

7 him, how they might destroy him. But Jesus, when he knew *it*, withdrew himself from thence with his disciples to the sea.

Section 34.

Healing at the Seaside. The Apostles chosen.

MATTHEW 10 : 2-4 ; 12 : 15-21. MARK 3 : 7-19. LUKE 6 : 12-19.

Mk. 7 AND great multitudes from Galilee followed him, and from 8 Judea, and from Jerusalem and from Idumea, and *from* beyond Jordan; and he healed them all. And they about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, when they had heard what great things 9 he did, came unto him. And he spake to his disciples, that a small ship should wait on him because of the multitude, lest they 10 should throng him. For he had healed many; insomuch that they pressed upon him for to touch him, as many as had plagues. 11 And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before him, 12 and cried saying, Thou art the Son of God. And he straitly charged them that they should not make him known. **M.** 17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, say- 18 ing, Behold my servant whom I have chosen; my beloved, in whom my soul is well pleased; I will put my Spirit upon him, and 19 he shall shew judgment to the Gentiles. He shall not strive nor 20 cry; neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets. A bruised reed shall he not break, and smoking flax shall he not 21 quench, till he send forth judgment unto victory. And in his name shall the Gentiles trust.

L 12 And it came to pass in those days, that he went out into a

- 13 mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God. And when it was day, he called unto him his disciples, whom he would, and they came unto him. And of them he chose and ordained twelve, whom also he named Apostles : that they should be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach ; **Mk.** 15 and to have power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out devils. Now the names of the twelve apostles are these : The first, Simon (whom he also named Peter), and Andrew his brother ; James *the son of Zebedee*, and John the brother of James (and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, The sons of thunder) ; Philip and Bartholomew ; Matthew the publican, and Thomas ; James *the son of Alphaeus*, and Lebbeus whose surname was Thaddeus, [whom Luke names] Judas *the brother of James* ; Simon the Canaanite, called Zelotes, and Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him.
- L. 17 And he came down with them, and stood in the plain ; and the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of all Judea and Jerusalem and from the sea coast of Tyre and Sidon, which came to hear him and to be healed of their diseases ; and they that were vexed with unclean spirits : and they were healed. And the whole multitude sought to touch him : for there went virtue out of him, and healed *them* all.

Section 35.

Sermon on the Mount. The Beatitudes.

MATTHEW 5 : 1-16. LUKE 6 : 20-26.

- M. 1 AND seeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountain : and 2 when he was set, his disciples came unto him. And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples ; and he opened his mouth and taught them, saying,
- 3 Blessed *are* the poor in spirit : for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.
- 4 Blessed *are* they that mourn : for they shall be comforted.
- 5 Blessed *are* the meek : for they shall inherit the earth.
- 6 Blessed *are* they which now do hunger and thirst after righteousness : for they shall be filled.
- Blessed *are ye* that weep now : for ye shall laugh.

- 7 Blessed *are* the merciful : for they shall obtain mercy.
 8 Blessed *are* the pure in heart : for they shall see God.
 9 Blessed *are* the peacemakers : for they shall be called the children of God.
 10 Blessed *are* they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake : for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.
 11 Blessed are ye, when *men* shall hate you, and revile you ; and when they shall separate you *from their company*, and shall persecute you ; and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, and cast out your name as evil, for my sake.
 12 Rejoice ye in that day ; be exceeding glad, and leap for joy : for great *is* your reward in heaven : for in like manner their fathers persecuted the prophets which were before you.
 L. 24 But woe unto you that are rich ! for ye have received your consolation.
 25 Woe unto you that are full ! for ye shall hunger.
 Woe unto you that laugh now ! for ye shall mourn and weep.
 26 Woe unto you, when all men shall speak well of you ! for so did their fathers to the false prophets.
 M. 13 Ye are the salt of the earth : but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted ? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men.
 14 Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot
 15 be hid. Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick ; and it giveth light unto all that are in the
 16 house. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see **your** good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

Section 36.

Sermon on the Mount. The Law in its Spirit. The Sixth Command.

MATTHEW 5 : 17-26.

- 17 THINK not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets :
 18 I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily, I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no
 19 wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore

- shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called least in the kingdom of heaven : but whosoever shall do, and teach *them*, the same shall be called great
- 20 in the kingdom of heaven. For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed *the righteousness* of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.
- 21 Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill ; and whosoever shall kill, shall be in danger of the judgment :
- 22 but I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause, shall be in danger of the judgment : and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council : but whosoever shall say, *Thou fool*, shall be in danger of
- 23 hell-fire. Therefore, if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there
- 24 rememberest that thy brother hath aught against thee, leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way ; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.
- 25 Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him ; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into
- 26 prison. Verily, I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.

Section 37.

Sermon on the Mount. The Law further explained.

MATTHEW 5 : 27-48. LUKE 6 : 27-30, 32-36.

- M. 27 YE have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou
- 28 shalt not commit adultery. But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery
- 29 with her already in his heart. And if thy right eye offend thee [or, cause thee to offend], pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee : for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish,
- 30 and not *that* thy whole body should be cast into hell. And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast *it* from thee : for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and
- 31 not *that* thy whole body should be cast into hell. It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writ-

32 ing of divorcement. But I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery : and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery.

33 Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the
34 Lord thine oaths. But I say unto you, Swear not at all ; neither
35 by heaven ; for it is God's throne : nor by the earth ; for it is his footstool : neither by Jerusalem ; for it is the city of the great
36 King. Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst
37 not make one hair white or black. But let your communication be, Yea, yea ; Nay, nay : for whatsoever is more than these cometh
38 of evil. Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye,
39 and a tooth for a tooth. But I say unto you, That ye resist not evil : but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to
40 him the other also. And if any man will sue thee at the law, and
41 take away thy coat, let him have *thy* cloak also. And whosoever
42 shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain. Give to him that asketh thee ; from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away ; and of him that taketh away thy goods, ask them not again.

43 Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy. But I say unto you which hear, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you and
45 persecute you ; that ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven : for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the
46 good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye ? for sinners also
47 lovethose that lovethem. And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more *than others* ? do not even the publicans so ? **L.** 33 And if ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye ?
34 for sinners also do even the same. And if ye lend *to them* of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye ? for sinners also lend to
35 sinners, to receive as much again. But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again ; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest : for he
36 is kind unto the unthankful and *to the evil*. Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful.

M. 48 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

Section 38.

Almsgiving. Prayer. The Lord's Prayer.

MATTHEW 6 : 1-18.

- 1 TAKE heed that you do not your alms before men, to be seen of them : otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in
2 heaven. Therefore, when thou doest *thine* alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do, in the synagogues, and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily, I say
3 unto you, They have their reward. But when thou doest alms,
4 let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth ; that thine alms may be in secret : and thy Father which seeth in secret, himself shall reward thee openly.
- 5 And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites *are* ; for they love to pray standing in the synagogues, and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily, I say
6 unto you, They have their reward. But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret, and thy Father, which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.
- 7 But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen *do* : for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking.
8 Be not ye therefore like unto them : for your Father knoweth
9 what things ye have need of before ye ask him. After this manner therefore pray ye :
- 10 Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy
11 kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth as *it is* in heaven. Give
12 us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil. For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.
- 14 For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will
15 also forgive you : But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.
- 16 Moreover, when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance : for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily, I say unto you, They have their reward.
17 But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thy head, and wash thy face ;
18 that thou appear not unto men to fast, but unto thy Father, which is in secret : and thy Father, which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

Section 39.

Sermon on the Mount. Treasure. Service. Trust.

MATTHEW 6 : 19-34.

- 19 LAY not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and
 20 rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal : but
 lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor
 rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor
 21 steal. For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.
 22 The light of the body is the eye : if therefore thine eye be single,
 23 thy whole body shall be full of light. But if thine eye be evil, thy
 whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is
 in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness !
- 24 No man can serve two masters : for either he will hate the one,
 and love the other ; or else he will hold to the one, and despise
 the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.
- 25 Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what
 ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink ; nor yet for your body, what
 ye shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and the body
 26 than raiment ? Behold the fowls of the air : for they sow not,
 neither do they reap, nor gather into barns ; yet your heavenly
 27 Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they ? Which
 28 of you by taking thought can add one cubit unto his stature ? And
 why take ye thought for raiment ? Consider the lilies of the field
 29 how they grow ; they toil not, neither do they spin ; and yet I say
 unto you, That even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like
 30 one of these. Wherefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field,
 which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven, *shall he not*
much more clothe you, O ye of little faith ?
- 31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat ? or, What
 32 shall we drink ? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed ? (For after
 all these things do the Gentiles seek ;) for your heavenly Father
 33 knoweth that ye have need of all these things. But seek ye first
 the kingdom of God, and his righteousness, and all these things
 34 shall be added unto you. Take therefore no thought for the mor-
 row : for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself.
Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof,

Section 40.

Sermon on the Mount. Judge not. Ask. Enter in.

MATTHEW 7 : 1-20. LUKE 6 : 31, 37-45.

- L. 37 JUDGE not, and ye shall not be judged ; for with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged. Condemn not, and ye
 38 shall not be condemned. Forgive, and ye shall be forgiven. Give, and it shall be given unto you ; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again.
- 39 And he spake a parable unto them, Can the blind lead the blind ?
 40 shall they not both fall into the ditch ? The disciple is not above his master : but every one that is perfect, shall be as his master.
- 41 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye,
 42 but perceivest not the beam that is in thine own eye ? Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou thyself beholdest not the beam that is in thine own eye ? Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to pull out the mote that is in thy brother's eye.
- M. 6 Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you.
- 7 Ask, and it shall be given you ; seek, and ye shall find ; knock,
 8 and it shall be opened unto you. For every one that asketh, receiveth ; and he that seeketh, findeth ; and to him that knocketh,
 9 it shall be opened. Or what man is there of you, whom if his son
 10 ask bread, will he give him a stone ? or if he ask a fish, will he
 11 give him a serpent ? If ye then being evil know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father
 12 which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him ? Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye also even so to them : for this is the law and the prophets.
- 13 Enter ye in at the strait gate ; for wide is the gate, and broad is the way that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go
 14 in thereat : because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.
- 15 Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing,
 16 but inwardly they are ravening wolves. Ye shall know them by

- their fruits. For every tree is known by his own fruit. **M.** 44 For of thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble bush gather they grapes. **M.** 17 Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit: neither *can* a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.
- L.** 45 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is good; and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is evil: wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.

Section 41.

The Wise and the Foolish Builders.

MATTHEW 7 : 21-29 ; 8 : 1. LUKE 6 : 46-49.

- L.** 46 AND why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say? Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; **M.** 21 but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.
- L.** 24 Therefore, whosoever cometh to me, and heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built an house, and digged deep, and laid the foundation upon a rock. And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it; and it fell not, for it was founded upon a rock. And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, that, without a foundation, built his house upon the sand. And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and the stream did beat vehemently upon that house, and it fell; and great was the fall and the ruin of that house.
- L.** 28 And it came to pass, when Jesus had ended these sayings, the

29 people were astonished at his doctrine. For he taught them as one having authority, and not as the scribes.

1 When he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him.

Section 42.

Heals the Centurion's Servant.

Capernaum.

MATTHEW 8 : 5-13. LUKE 7 : 1-10.

L. 1 Now when he had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, he entered into Capernaum.

2 And a certain centurion's servant, who was dear unto him, was
3 sick of the palsy, and ready to die. And when he heard of Jesus,
he sent unto him the elders of the Jews, beseeching him that he
4 would come and heal his servant. And when they came to Jesus,
they besought him instantly, saying, That he was worthy for whom
5 he should do this. For he loveth our nation, and he hath built
6 us a synagogue. Then Jesus went with them. And when he was
now not far from the house, the centurion sent friends to him,
saying unto him, Lord, trouble not thyself.

M. 5, 6 Then came unto him the centurion, beseeching him, and
saying, Lord, my servant lieth at home sick of the palsy, grievous-
7 ly tormented. And Jesus saith unto him, I will come and heal
8 him. The centurion answered and said, Lord, I am not worthy
that thou shouldest enter under my roof. Wherefore neither
thought I myself worthy to come unto thee : but speak the word
9 only, and my servant shall be healed. For I also am a man set
under authority, having soldiers under me : and I say unto this
one, Go, and he goeth : and to another, Come, and he cometh ;
and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.

10 When Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him, and
turned him about, and said unto the people that followed him,
Verily, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in
11 Israel. And I say unto you, That many shall come from the east
and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob,
12 in the kingdom of heaven. But the children of the kingdom shall

be cast out into utter darkness : there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

- 13 And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way, and as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee. **L.** 10 And his servant was healed in the self-same hour. And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the servant whole that had been sick.

Section 43.

The Widow's Son raised to Life. Messengers from John.

MATTHEW 11 : 2-6. LUKE 7 : 11-23.

- L.** 11 AND it came to pass the day after, that he went into a city called Nain ; and many of his disciples went with him, and much people. Now when he came nigh to the gate of the city, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the only son of his mother : and she was a widow : and much people of the city was with her.
- 13 And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said
- 14 unto her, Weep not. And he came and touched the bier : and they that bare him stood still. And he said, Young man, I say
- 15 unto thee, Arise. And he that was dead sat up, and began to
- 16 speak : and he delivered him to his mother. And there came a fear on all : and they glorified God, saying, That a great prophet is risen up among us ; and, That God had visited his people.
- 17 And this rumour of him went forth throughout all Judea, and throughout all the region round about.
- 18, 19 And the disciples of John shewed him all these things. And John, when *he* had heard in the prison the works of Christ, calling unto him two of his disciples, sent *them* unto Jesus, saying unto him, Art thou he that should come, or look we for another?
- 20 When the men were come unto him, they said, John Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he that should come, or look we for another?
- 21 And in that same hour he cured many of *their* infirmities, and plagues, and of evil spirits, and to many *that were* blind he gave
- 22 sight. Then Jesus answering, said unto them, Go your way and tell John again what things ye have seen and heard, how that the

blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and to the poor the
 23 gospel is preached. And blessed is *he*, whosoever shall not be offended in me,

Section 44.

Extols John, and reproves the Generation.

MATTHEW 11 : 7-19. LUKE 7 : 24-35.

L. 24 AND when the messengers of John were departed, Jesus began to speak unto the people concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness for to see? A reed shaken with the wind?
 25 But what went ye outfor to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they which are gorgeously apparelled in soft *clothing*, and
 26 live delicately, are in kings' courts. But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a
 27 prophet. For this is *he* of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. **M.** 11 Verily, I say unto you, Among them that are born of women, there hath not risen a greater prophet than John the Baptist : notwithstanding, he that is least in the kingdom of
 12 heaven, is greater than he. And from the days of John the Baptist until now, the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the
 13 violent take it by force. For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John. And if ye will receive *it*, this is Elias, which was
 14 for to come. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.
 L. 29 And all the people that heard *him*, and the publicans, justified God, being baptized with the baptism of John. But the
 30 Pharisees and lawyers rejected the counsel of God against themselves, being not baptized of him. And the Lord said, Whereunto then shall I liken the men of this generation? and to what are
 31 they like? They are like unto children sitting in the marketplace, and calling one to another, and saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned to you, and ye
 32 have not wept. For John the Baptist came neither eating bread nor drinking wine; and ye say, He hath a devil. The Son of man is come eating and drinking; and ye say, Behold a gluttonous
 33 man, and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and sinners! But wisdom is justified of all her children.

Section 45.

Upbraids the Favored Cities. Invites the Heavy-laden.

Capernaum.

MATTHEW 11 : 20-30.

- 20 THEN began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty
 21 works were done, because they repented not. Woe unto thee,
 Chorazin ! woe unto thee, Bethsaida ! for if the mighty works
 which were done in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they
 22 would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. But I say
 unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day
 23 of judgment, than for you. And thou, Capernaum, which art ex-
 alted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell : for if the
 mighty works which have been done in thee had been done in
 24 Sodom, it would have remained until this day. But I say unto
 you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the
 day of judgment, than for thee.
- 25 At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father,
 Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from
 26 the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes. Even
 27 so, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight. All things are de-
 livered unto me of my Father ; and no man knoweth the Son, but
 the Father ; neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son,
 28 and *he* to whomsoever the Son will reveal *him*. Come unto me,
 all *ye* that labour, and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.
 29 Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me : for I am meek and
 30 lowly in heart ; and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For my
 yoke *is* easy, and my burden is light.

Section 46.

The Pharisee and the Sinner. The Two Debtors. Second Circuit in Galilee.

LUKE 7 : 36-50 ; 8 : 1-3.

- 36 AND one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him.
 And he went into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to meat.

37 And behold, a woman in the city, which was a sinner, when
she knew that *Jesus* sat at meat in the Pharisee's house, brought
38 an alabaster-box of ointment, and stood at his feet behind *him*
weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe *them*
with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed *them*
39 with the ointment. Now when the Pharisee which had bidden
him saw *it*, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were
a prophet, would have known who, and what manner of woman
this is that toucheth him : for she is a sinner.

40 And Jesus answering said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat
41 to say unto thee. And he saith, Master, say on. There was a
certain creditor, which had two debtors : the one owed five hun-
42 dred pence, and the other fifty. And when they had nothing to
pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore, which of
43 them will love him most? Simon answered and said, I suppose
that *he*, to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, Thou
hast rightly judged.

44 And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, Seest thou
this woman? I entered into thine house ; thou gavest me no
water for my feet : but she hath washed my feet with tears, and
45 wiped *them* with the hairs of her head. Thou gavest me no kiss :
but this woman, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kiss
46 my feet. My head with oil thou didst not anoint : but this woman
47 hath anointed my feet with ointment. Wherefore I say unto thee,
Her sins, which are many, are forgiven ; for she loved much : but
48 to whom little is forgiven, *the same* loveth little. And he said unto
49 her, Thy sins are forgiven. And they that sat at meat with him
began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgiveth sins
50 also? And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee ; go
in peace.

1 And it came to pass afterward, that he went throughout every
city and village, preaching and shewing the glad tidings of the
2 kingdom of God : and the twelve *were* with him ; and certain
women, which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities,
3 Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went seven devils, and Joanna
the wife of Chuza, Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many
others, which ministered unto him of their substance.

Section 47.

Heals a Blind and Dumb Demoniac. Blasphemy against the Holy Ghost.

Galilee.

MATTHEW 12 : 22-37. MARK 3 : 19-30. LUKE 11 : 14, 15, 17-23.

- Mk. 19, 20 AND they went into an house. And the multitude cometh together again, so that they could not so much as eat
21 bread. And when his friends heard *of it*, they went out to lay hold on him : for they said, He is beside himself.
- M. 22 Then was brought unto him one possessed of a devil, blind and dumb : and he healed him, insomuch that it came to pass when the devil was gone out the blind and dumb both spake
23 and saw. And all the people were amazed, and said, Is not this the son of David ?
- 24 But the Pharisees, when they heard *it*, and the scribes which came down from Jerusalem, said, This *fellow* hath Beelzebub, and
25 by the prince of the devils casteth he out devils. But Jesus knew their thoughts, and called them unto him, and said unto them in parables, How can Satan cast out Satan ? Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation ; and every city or house
26 divided against itself shall not stand. And if Satan rise up against *and* cast out Satan, he is divided against himself : how shall then his kingdom stand ? He cannot stand, but hath an
27 end. And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your
28 children cast *them* out ? therefore they shall be your judges. But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God
29 is come unto you. No man can enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he will first bind the strong man ; and then he will spoil his house. When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace ; but when a stronger than he shall come upon him and overcome him, he taketh from him all
30 his armour wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils. He that is not with me is against me ; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth abroad.
- 31 Wherefore, verily, I say unto you, All manner of sins shall be forgiven unto the sons of men, and blasphemies wherewith soever they shall blaspheme ; but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men.

32 And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him : but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the *world* to come : he hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation. Because they said, He hath an unclean spirit.

33 Either make the tree good, and his fruit good : or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt : for the tree is known by
34 *his* fruit. O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth
35 speaketh. A good man out of the good treasure of the heart bringeth forth good things : and an evil man out of the evil treasure
36 bringeth forth evil things. But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the
37 day of judgment. For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

Section 48.

Rebukes the Scribes and Pharisees. Disciples his Kindred.

Galilee.

MATTHEW 12 : 38-50. LUKE 11 : 16, 24-36 ; 8 : 19-21. MARK 3 : 31-35.

M. 38 THEN certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees tempting him answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from heaven,
39 from thee. But when the people were gathered thick together, he answered and said to them, This is an evil and adulterous generation ; they seek after a sign, and there shall no sign be given to it but the sign of the prophet Jonas. As Jonas was a sign unto the Ninevites, so shall also the Son of man be to this generation.
40 For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly, so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart
41 of the earth. The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it : because they repented at the preaching of Jonas ; and, behold, a greater than Jonas is here.
42 The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with the

men of this generation, and shall condemn them : for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon ; and, behold, a greater than Solomon *is* here.

L. 33 No man, when he hath lighted a candle, putteth *it* in a secret place, neither under a bushel, but on a candlestick, that they
34 which come in may see the light. The light of the body is the eye : therefore when *thine* eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light ; but when *thine* eye is evil, thy body also *is* full of
35 darkness. Take heed therefore that the light which is in thee be not darkness. If thy whole body therefore *be* full of light, having
36 no part dark, the whole shall be full of light, as when the bright shining of a candle doth give thee light.

M. 43 When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh
44 through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none. Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out : and
45 when he is come, he findeth *it* empty, swept, and garnished. Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in and dwell there : and the last *state* of that man is worse than the first. Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation.

L. 27 And it came to pass, as he spake these things, a certain woman of the company lifted up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed *is* the womb that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast
28 sucked. But he said, Yea, rather blessed *are* they that hear the word of God, and keep it.

M. 46 While he yet talked to the people, behold, there came then his mother and his brethren, and standing without, sent unto him, calling him, desiring to speak with him. And the multitude sat
47 about him. Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to see thee, to speak with thee.
48 But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother ? and who are my brethren ? And he looked round about
49 on them which sat about him, and stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren ! my mother and my brethren are these which hear the word of God
50 and do it. For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

Section 49.

Dining with Pharisees, denounces their Hypocrisy.

Galilee.

LŪKE 11 : 37-54.

- 37 AND as he spake, a certain Pharisee besought him to dine with him : and he went in, and sat down to meat.
- 38 And when the Pharisee saw *it*, he marvelled that he had not first
 39 washed before dinner. And the Lord said unto him, Now do ye Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup and the platter ; but
 40 your inward part is full of ravening and wickedness. Ye fools, did not he that made that which is without, make that which is
 41 within also ? But rather give alms of such things as ye have ; and
 42 behold, all things are clean unto you. But woe unto you, Pharisees ! for ye tithe mint, and rue, and all manner of herbs, and pass over judgment and the love of God : these ought ye to have
 43 done, and not to leave the other undone. Woe unto you, Pharisees ! for ye love the uppermost seats in the synagogues, and
 44 greetings in the markets. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for ye are as graves which appear not, and the men that walk over *them* are not aware of *them*.
- 45 Then answered one of the lawyers, and said unto him, Master, thus saying, thou reproachest us also. And he said, Woe unto
 46 you also, ye lawyers ! for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your
 47 fingers. Woe unto you ! for ye build the sepulchres of the
 48 prophets, and your fathers killed them. Truly ye bear witness, that ye allow the deeds of your fathers : for they indeed killed them, and
 49 ye build their sepulchres. Therefore also said the wisdom of God, I will send them prophets and apostles, and *some* of them they
 50 shall slay and persecute : that the blood of all the prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of
 51 this generation ; from the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zacharias, which perished between the altar and the temple : verily, I
 52 say unto you, It shall be required of this generation. Woe unto you, lawyers ! for ye have taken away the key of knowledge : ye enter not in yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered.

53 And as he said these things unto them, the scribes and the
 Pharisees began to urge *him* vehemently, and to provoke him to
 54 speak of many things ; laying wait for him, and seeking to catch
 something out of his mouth, that they might accuse him.

Section 50.

Cautions the Disciples. The Rich Fool.

Galilee.

LUKE 12 : 1-21.

- 1 IN the mean time, when there were gathered together an innu-
 merable multitude of people, insomuch that they trode one upon
 another, he began to say unto his disciples first of all, Beware ye
- 2 of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. For there is
 nothing covered, that shall not be revealed ; neither hid that shall
- 3 not be known. Therefore, whatsoever ye have spoken in dark-
 ness, shall be heard in the light ; and that which ye have spoken
 in the ear in closets, shall be proclaimed upon the house tops.
- 4 And I say unto you, my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill
- 5 the body, and after that, have no more that they can do But I
 will forewarn you whom ye shall fear : Fear him, which after he
 hath killed, hath power to cast into hell ; yea, I say unto you,
- 6 Fear him. Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings, and not
- 7 one of them is forgotten before God ? But even the very hairs of
 your head are all numbered. Fear not therefore : ye are of more
 value than many sparrows.
- 8 Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confess me before men,
- him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God.
- 9 But he that denieth me before men, shall be denied before the
- 10 angels of God. And whosoever shall speak a word against the
 Son of man, it shall be forgiven him ; but unto him that blasphem-
- 11 eth against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven. And when
 they bring you unto the synagogues, and *unto* magistrates, and
 powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or
- 12 what ye shall say : for the Holy Ghost shall teach you in the same
 hour what ye ought to say.
- 13 And one of the company said unto him, Master, speak to my

- 14 brother, that he divide the inheritance with me. And he said
 unto him, Man, who made me a judge, or a divider over you?
 15 And he said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness :
 for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which
 he possesseth.
 16 And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a
 17 certain rich man brought forth plentifully : and he thought within
 himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where
 18 to bestow my fruits? And he said, This will I do : I will pull
 down my barns, and build greater ; and there will I bestow all
 19 my fruits and my goods. And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou
 hast much goods laid up for many years ; take thine ease, eat,
 20 drink, *and* be merry. But God said unto him, *Thou* fool, this
 night thy soul shall be required of thee : then whose shall those
 21 things be which thou hast provided? So is he that layeth up
 treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.

Section 51.

Unanxious Trust in God. Watching.

Galilee.

LUKE 12 : 22-40.

- 22 AND he said unto his disciples, Therefore I say unto you, Take
 no thought for your life, what ye shall eat ; neither for the body,
 23 what ye shall put on. The life is more than meat, and the body
 24 *is more* than raiment. Consider the ravens : for they neither sow
 nor reap : which neither have storehouse nor barn ; and God
 feedeth them. How much more are ye better than the fowls?
 25 And which of you with taking thought can add to his stature one
 26 cubit? If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least, why
 27 take ye thought for the rest? Consider the lilies how they grow :
 they toil not, they spin not ; and yet I say unto you, that Solomon
 28 in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. If then God so
 clothe the grass, which is to-day in the field, and to-morrow is
 cast into the oven ; how much more *will he* clothe you, O ye of
 little faith?
 29 And seek not ye what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink,

30 neither be ye of doubtful mind. For all these things do the na-
 tions of the world seek after : and your Father knoweth that ye
 31 have need of these things. But rather seek ye the kingdom of God,
 32 and all these things shall be added unto you. Fear not, little
 flock ; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the king-
 33 dom. Sell that ye have, and give alms ; provide yourselves bags
 which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens that faileth not,
 34 where no thief approacheth, neither moth corrupteth. For where
 your treasure is, there will your heart be also.
 35 Let your loins be girded about, and *your* lights burning ;
 36 and ye yourselves like unto men that wait for their lord, when he
 will return from the wedding ; that, when he cometh and knock-
 37 eth, they may open unto him immediately. Blessed *are* those
 servants, whom the lord when he cometh shall find watching ;
 verily, I say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them
 38 to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them. And
 if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch,
 39 and find *them* so, blessed are those servants. And this know, that
 if the goodman of the house had known what hour the thief would
 come, he would have watched, and not have suffered his house to
 40 be broken through. Be ye therefore ready also : for the Son of
 man cometh at an hour when ye think not.

Section 52.

The Faithful Servant. Divisive Effects of the Gospel.

Galilee.

LUKE 12 : 41-59.

41 THEN Peter said unto him, Lord, speakest thou this parable
 42 unto us, or even to all? And the Lord said, Who then is that
 faithful and wise steward, whom *his* lord shall make ruler over his
 household, to give *them* *their* portion of meat in due season?
 43 Blessed *is* that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find
 44 so doing. Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler
 45 over all that he hath. But and if that servant say in his heart,
 My lord delayeth his coming : and shall begin to beat the men-
 servants, and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken ;
 46 the lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not

- for *him*, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers.
- 47 And that servant which knew his lord's will, and prepared not *himself*, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with
- 48 many *stripes*. But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few *stripes*, for unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required ; and to whom men have committed much, of him will they ask the more.
- 49 I am come to send fire on the earth, and what will I, if it be
- 50 already kindled ? But I have a baptism to be baptized with ; and
- 51 how am I straitened till it be accomplished ! Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth ? I tell you, Nay ; but rather di-
- 52 vision : for from henceforth there shall be five in one house di-
- 53 vided, three against two, and two against three. The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father ; the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother ; the mother-in-law against her daughter-in-law, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law.
- 54 And he said also to the people, When ye see a cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye say, There cometh a shower ; and so it
- 55 is. And when ye see the south wind blow, ye say, 'There will be
- 56 heat ; and it cometh to pass. Ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky, and of the earth ; but how is it, that ye do not
- 57 discern this time ? Yea, and why even of yourselves judge ye not what is right ?
- 58 When thou goest with thine adversary to the magistrate, *as thou art* in the way, give diligence that thou mayest be delivered from him ; lest he hale thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and the officer cast thee into prison. I tell thee, thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast paid the very last mite.

Section 53.

Calamities are not Judgments. The Barren Fig-tree.

Galilee.

LUKE 13 : 1-9.

- 1 THERE were present at that season some that told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices.

2 And Jesus answering, said unto them, Suppose ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they suffered such things? I tell you, Nay; but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish. Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them, think ye that they were sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem? I tell you, Nay; but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

6 He spake also this parable: A certain man had a fig-tree planted in his vineyard; and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none. Then said he unto the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig-tree, and find none: cut it down; why cumbereth it the ground? And he answering, said unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it: and if it bear fruit, well; and if not, then after that thou shalt cut it down.

Section 54.

The Sower. Why Christ used Parables.

The Lake-side at Capernaum

MATTHEW 13 : 1-17. MARK 4 : 1-12. LUKE 8 : 4-10.

M. 1 THE same day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the sea side, and began again to teach. And great multitudes were gathered together, and were come unto him out of every city, so that he entered into a ship, and sat in the sea; and the whole multitude stood on the shore.

3 And he spake unto them, and taught them many things by parables; and said unto them in his doctrine, **Mk. 3** Harken; behold, a sower went out to sow his seed. And it came to pass, as he sowed, some fell by the way side; and it was trodden down, and the fowls of the air came and devoured it up. And some fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth; and immediately it sprang up, because it had no depth of earth. But as soon as it was sprung up, when the sun was up, it was scorched, and because it had no root and lacked moisture, it withered away. And some fell among thorns, and the thorns grew up with it, and choked it, and it yielded no fruit. But other fell into good ground, and

sprang up, and increased ; and brought forth fruit, some thirty,
 9 and some sixty, and some an hundred fold. And when he had
 said these things, he cried, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.
 10 And when he was alone they that were about him, with the twelve
 disciples, came and asked him saying, What might this parable
 be ? **M.** 11 Why speakest thou unto them in parables ? He an-
 swered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know
 the mysteries of the kingdom of God, but unto them that are
 12 without it is not given. For whosoever hath, to him shall be
 given, and he shall have more abundance ; but whosoever hath
 13 not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath. Therefore
 speak I to others in parables : because they seeing see not ; and
 hearing they hear not, neither do they understand ; lest at any
 time they should be converted, and *their* sins should be forgiven
 14 them. And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias, which saith,
 By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand : and seeing ye
 15 shall see, and shall not perceive : for this people's heart is waxed
 gross, and *their* ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have
 closed ; lest at any time they should see with *their* eyes, and hear
 with *their* ears, and should understand with *their* heart, and should
 16 be converted, and I should heal them. But blessed *are* your eyes,
 17 for they see : and your ears, for they hear. For verily I say unto
 you, That many prophets and righteous *men* have desired to see
those things which ye see, and have not seen *them* ; and to hear
those things which ye hear, and have not heard *them*.

Section 55.

Explains the Parable of the Sower.

Capernaum.

MATTHEW 13 : 18-23. MARK 4 : 13-25. LUKE 8 : 11-18.

Mk. 13 AND he said unto them, Know ye not this parable ? And
 how then will ye know all parables ? Hear ye therefore the para-
 ble of the sower. The parable is this : The seed is the word of
 14, 15 God. The sower soweth the word. And those by the way side
 where the word is sown are they that hear the word of the king-
 dom and understand it not ; but when they have heard Satan

cometh immediately, and taketh away the word that was sown,
 16 out of their hearts, lest they should believe and be saved. And
 these are they likewise which have received the seed into stony
 places, who, when they have heard the word, immediately receive
 17 it with joy ; yet these have no root in themselves, and so endure
 but for a time : which for a while believe ; afterward, in time of
 temptation, when tribulation or persecution ariseth for the word's
 18 sake, immediately they are offended, *and* fall away. And these
 are they which received seed among thorns : such as hear the word,
 19 who when they have heard go forth ; and the cares of this world,
 and the deceitfulness of riches, and pleasures of *this* life, and the
 lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and *they* bring
 20 no fruit to perfection. But these are they that received seed into
 the good ground ; such as hear the word, and understand *and* re-
 ceive *it* in an honest and good heart, and keep it ; which also bear
 fruit with patience, and bring forth, some thirty-fold, some sixty,
 and some an hundred.

21 And he said unto them, No man when he hath lighted a candle,
 covereth it with a vessel, or putteth *it* under a bushel, or under a
 bed ; but setteth it on a candlestick, that they which enter in
 22 may see the light. For there is nothing hid which shall not be
 manifested : neither was anything kept secret, that shall not be
 23 known, and come abroad. If any man have ears to hear, let him
 24 hear. And he said unto them, Take heed therefore what *and* how
 he hear : with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to
 25 you : and unto you that hear shall more be given. For whosoever
 hath, to him shall be given ; and whosoever hath not, from him
 shall be taken away even that which he seemeth to have.

Section 56.

The Tares, and the Interpretation.

MATTHEW 13 : 24-30, 36-43.

24 ANOTHER parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom
 of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his
 25 field : but while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among
 26 the wheat, and went his way. But when the blade was sprung up,
 27 and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also. So the ser-

vants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?

28 He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said
 29 unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? But
 he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also
 30 the wheat with them. Let both grow together until the harvest :
 and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye to-
 gether first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them :
 but gather the wheat into my barn.

36 Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house :
 and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the para-
 37 ble of the tares of the field. He answered and said unto them,
 38 He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man ; the field is the
 world ; the good seed are the children of the kingdom ; but the
 39 tares are the children of the wicked *one* ; the enemy that sowed
 them is the devil ; the harvest is the end of the world ; and the
 40 reapers are the angels. As therefore the tares are gathered and
 41 burned in the fire ; so shall it be in the end of this world. The
 Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out
 of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do in-
 42 equity ; and shall cast them into a furnace of fire : there shall be
 43 wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then shall the righteous shine
 forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears
 to hear, let him hear.

Section 57.

**The Seed growing secretly. The Mustard-seed. The Leaven.
 Hid Treasure. The Pearl. The Net.**

Capernaum.

MATTHEW 13 : 31-36, 44-53. MARK 4 : 26-34.

Mk. 26 AND he said, So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should
 27 cast seed into the ground ; and should sleep and rise night and
 day, and the seed should spring and grow up, he knoweth not
 28 how. For the earth bringeth forth fruit of herself, first the blade,
 29 then the ear, after that the full corn in the ear. But when the
 fruit is brought forth, immediately he putteth in the sickle, be-
 cause the harvest is come.

30 And he said, Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of God?
 or with what comparison shall we compare it? **M.** 31 Another
 parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven
 is like to a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and sowed
 32 in his field; which indeed is the least of all seeds that be in the
 earth. But when it is sown, it groweth up, and when it is grown
 it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree, and shooteth
 out great branches; so that the birds of the air come and lodge in
 33 the branches thereof, under the shadow of it. Another parable
 spake he unto them; The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven,
 which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal, till the
 whole was leavened.

34 All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables.
 And with many such parables spake he the word unto them, as
 they were able to hear it. But without a parable spake he not
 35 unto them. That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the
 prophet, saying, I will open my mouth in parables; I will utter
 things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the
 world. And when they were alone, he expounded all things to
 36 his disciples. Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into
 the house: and his disciples came unto him.

[After explaining the parable of the tares (verses 37-43) he continues:]

44 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a
 field; the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy
 thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.
 45 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant man, seek-
 46 ing goodly pearls: who, when he had found one pearl of great
 price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it.
 47 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net, that was cast
 48 into the sea, and gathered of every kind; which, when it was full,
 they drew to shore, and set down, and gathered the good into ves-
 49 sels, but cast the bad away. So shall it be at the end of the
 world; the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from
 50 among the just, and shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there
 shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

51 Jesus saith unto them, Have ye understood all these things?
 52 They say unto him, Yea, Lord. Then said he unto them, There-
 fore every scribe *which is* instructed unto the kingdom of heaven,
 is like unto a man *that is* an householder, which bringeth forth out
 53 of his treasure things new and old. And it came to pass, *that* when
 Jesus had finished these parables, he departed thence.

Section 58.

Answers to Unready Disciples. Stilling of the Tempest.*Near and on the Lake.*

MATTHEW 8 : 18-27. MARK 4 : 35-41. LUKE 8 : 22-25 ; 9 : 57-62.

- M. 18 AND the same day when the even was come, when Jesus saw great multitudes about him, he gave commandment to depart ; *and* saith unto them, Let us pass over unto the other side of the lake.
- 19 And it came to pass, that as they went in the way, a certain scribe came and said unto him, Master, I will follow thee whither-soever thou goest. And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air *have* nests ; but the Son of man hath not where to lay *his* head. And he said unto another of his disciples, Follow me. But he said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. But Jesus said unto him, Follow me. Let the dead bury their dead : but go thou and preach the kingdom of God. **L.** 61 And another also said, Lord, I will follow thee ; but let me first go bid them farewell, which are at home at
- 62 my house. And Jesus said unto him, No man having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.
- Mk. 36 And when they had sent away the multitude, they took him even as he was in the ship. And when he was entered, his disciples followed him. And there were also with him other little ships. And they launched forth. But as they sailed he fell
- 37 asleep. And behold, there came down a great storm of wind, and there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was covered with the waves ; and the waves beat into the ship so that
- 38 it was now full, and they were in jeopardy. And he was in the hinder part of the ship asleep on a pillow ; and his disciples came to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, Master, we perish ! carest thou not that we perish ? Lord, save us ; we perish ! And he saith unto them, Why are ye so fearful, O ye of little faith ? Then he arose, and rebuked the winds, and the raging of the water, and said unto the sea, Peace, be still. And the wind ceased, and there
- 40 was a great calm. And he said unto them, Where is your faith ? How is it that ye have no faith ?
- 41 But the men feared exceedingly, and marvelled, and said one to another, What manner of man is this ? for he commandeth even the winds and water, and the winds and the sea obey him.

Section 59.

The Demoniac of Gergesa or Gadara.

East Side of the Lake.

MATTHEW 8 : 28-34 ; 9 : 1. MARK 5 : 1-21. LUKE 8 : 26-40.

- Mk. 1 AND they came over unto the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gadarenes, *or* Gergesenes, which is over against
 2 Galilee. And when he went forth out of the ship to land, there met him, out of the city, two possessed with devils coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce so that no man might pass by that way : [*one*] a man with an unclean spirit which had devils long
 3 time, who had his dwelling among the tombs ; and no man could
 4 bind him, no, not with chains. Because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains ; and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces ; neither could
 5 any man tame him. And he ware no clothes, neither abode in *any* house ; but driven of the devil into the wilderness, always night and day he was in the mountains and in the tombs, crying, and cutting himself with stones.
 6 But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran ; and fell down before
 7 him, and worshipped him, and cried with a loud voice, and said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the most high God ? art thou come hither to torment us before the time ? I be-
 8 seech thee, I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not. For he had said unto him, *Thou* unclean spirit, come out of the man !
 9 And Jesus asked him, What is thy name ? And he answered, saying, My name is Legion, for we are many : because many devils
 10 were entered into him. And they besought him much, that he would not send them away out of the country, that he would not command them to go out into the deep.
 11 Now there was there, a good way off from them, nigh unto the
 12 mountains, a great herd of swine feeding. And all the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into
 13 the herd of swine, that we may enter into them. And forthwith Jesus gave them leave, and said unto them, Go. And the unclean spirits went out of the man, and entered into the swine. And behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea (they were about two thousand), and were choked, and perished in the waters.

- 14 And when they that fed the swine saw what was done, they fled, and went their ways and told everything in the city and in the country, and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils. And behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus, and to see
- 15 what it was that was done. And they came to Jesus, and found the man out of whom the devils were departed ; and saw him that had the legion, sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed, and in his
- 16 right mind : and they were afraid. And they that saw *it* told them by what means he that was possessed of the devils was healed,
- 17 and also concerning the swine. Then the whole multitude of the country of the Gadarenes round about besought him to depart from them out of their coasts ; for they were taken with a great fear.
- 18 And when he was come into the ship, the man out of whom the devils were departed besought him that he might be with him.
- 19 How be it, Jesus suffered him not, but sent him away, saying, Return to thine own house, and to thy friends, and tell them how great things God hath done for thee, and how the Lord hath had
- 20 compassion on thee. And he departed, and went his way, and began to publish throughout the whole city, and in Decapolis, how great things Jesus had done for him ; and all men did marvel.
- 21 And he entered into a ship, and when he was passed over again unto the other side, much people gathered unto him, and *gladly* received him, for they were all waiting for him ; and he was nigh unto the sea. And he came into his own city.

Section 60.

Matthew's Feast. Old and New Garments and Bottles.

Capernaum.

MATTHEW 9 : 10-17. MARK 2 : 15-22. LUKE 5 : 29-39.

- L. 29 AND Levi made him a great feast in his own house. **M.** 10 And it came to pass, that as Jesus sat at meat in the house, behold, a great company of publicans and sinners came and sat down also with him and his disciples ; for there were many, and they fol-
- 11 lowed him. But when the scribes and Pharisees saw him eat with publicans and sinners, they murmured against his disciples, *and*

- said unto *them*, Why eateth and drinketh your Master, why do ye
 12 eat and drink, with publicans and sinners? But when Jesus heard
that, answering, he said unto them, They that are whole need not
 13 a physician, but they that are sick. But go ye and learn what *that*
 meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice. For I am not come
 to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.
- Mk. 18 And the disciples of John and of the Pharisees used to fast,
 and they come and say unto him, Why do the disciples of John
 and of the Pharisees fast often, and make prayers, but thy disci-
 19 ples fast not, but eat and drink? And Jesus said unto them, Can
 ye make the children of the bride-chamber fast *and* mourn, while
 the bridegroom is with them? As long as they have the bride-
 20 groom with them, they cannot fast. But the days will come,
 when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then
 shall they fast in those days.
- 21 And he spake also a parable unto them: No man seweth a piece
 of new cloth on an old garment; else the new piece that filled it
 up taketh away from the old garment, and the rent is made
 worse, and the piece that was *taken* out of the new, agreeth not
 with the old. **L.** 37 And no man putteth new wine into old bot-
 tles: else the new wine will burst the bottles, and the wine is
 38 spilled, and the bottles shall perish. But new wine must be put
 39 into new bottles, and both are preserved. No man also having
 drunk old *wine*, straightway desireth new: for he saith, The old
 is better.

Section 61.

Healing by the Touch of his Garment. Jairus's Daughter.

Capernaum.

MATTHEW 9 : 18-26. MARK 5 : 22-43. LUKE 8 : 41-56.

- L.** 41 AND while he spake these things unto them, behold, there
 came a man named Jairus, one of the rulers of the synagogue;
 and when he saw him, he fell down at Jesus' feet and worshipped
 42 him, and besought him that he would come into his house: for
 he had one only daughter, about twelve years of age, and she lay
 a dying. **Mk.** 23 And *he* besought him greatly, saying, My little
 daughter lieth at the point of death, is even now dead: *I pray thee*

come and lay thy hands upon her, that she may be healed ; and
24 she shall live. And Jesus arose and followed him, and *so did* his
disciples. But as he went, much people followed him, and
thronged him.

25 And behold, a certain woman which was diseased with an issue
26 of blood twelve years, and had suffered many things, and had
spent all her living upon many physicians, neither could be healed
27 of any, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse, when
she had heard of Jesus, came in the press behind *him*, and
28 touched the border of his garment. For she said within herself,
29 If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole. And straight-
way the fountain of her blood was dried up ; and she felt in her
30 body that she was healed of that plague. And Jesus, immediately
knowing in himself that virtue had gone out of him, turned him-
31 about in the press, and said, Who touched my clothes ? When all
denied, Peter and they that were with him said unto him, Master,
thou seest the multitude throng thee and press *thee*, and sayest
thou, Who touched me ? And Jesus said, Somebody hath touched
32 me : for I perceive that virtue is gone out of me. And he looked
33 round about to see her that had done this thing. And when the
woman saw that she was not hid, she came fearing and trembling,
knowing what was done in her, and fell down before him, and told
him all the truth ; *and* declared unto him before all the people,
for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed im-
34 mediately. And when he saw her, he said unto her, Daughter, be
of good comfort, thy faith hath made thee whole ; go in peace,
and be whole of thy plague. And the woman was made whole
from that hour.

35 While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the
synagogue's *house*, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead : why
36 troublest thou the Master any further ? But as soon as Jesus
heard the word that was spoken, he saith unto the ruler of the
synagogue, Be not afraid, only believe, and she shall be made
37 whole. And when Jesus came into the ruler's house, he suffered
no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John the brother of
38 James, and the father and the mother of the maiden. And *he*
seeth the tumult, the minstrels and people making a noise, and
39 them that wept and wailed greatly. And when he was come in,
he saith unto them, Why make ye this ado, and weep ? Give
40 place : for the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed
him to scorn, knowing that she was dead. But, when he had put
them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damsel,

and them that were with him, and entereth in where the damsel
 41 was lying. And he took the damsel by the hand, and said unto
 her, Talithacumi : which is, being interpreted, Damsel, (I say
 42 unto thee) arise. And her spirit came again, and straightway the
 damsel arose, and walked ; for she was *of the age* of twelve years.
 43 And her parents were astonished with a great astonishment. And
 he charged them straitly that no man should know it ; and com-
 manded that something should be given her to eat. **M.** 26 And
 the fame hereof went abroad into all that land.

Section 62.

Heals Two Blind, and a Dumb Demoniac. Again rejected at Nazareth. Third Circuit in Galilee.

MATTHEW 9 : 27-38 ; 13 : 54-58. MARK 6 : 1-6.

M. 27 And when Jesus departed thence, two blind men followed
 him, crying, and saying, *Thou* Son of David have mercy on us.
 28 And when he was come into the house the blind men came to
 him ; and Jesus saith unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do
 29 this ? They said unto him, Yea, Lord. Then touched he their
 30 eyes, saying, According to your faith be it unto you. And their
 eyes were opened, and Jesus straitly charged them, saying, See
 31 *that* no man know *it*. But they, when they were departed, spread
 abroad his fame in all that country.

32 And as they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumb man
 33 possessed with a devil. And when the devil was cast out, the
 dumb spake. And the multitude marvelled, saying, It was never
 34 so seen in Israel. But the Pharisees said, He casteth out devils
 through Beelzebub the prince of the devils.

Mk. 1 And he went out from thence, and came into his own coun-
 2 try ; and his disciples follow him. And when the sabbath-day
 was come, he began to teach in the synagogue : and many hearing
him were astonished, and said, From whence hath this *man* these
 things ? and what wisdom *is* this which is given unto him, that
 even such mighty works are wrought by his hands ? **M.** 55 Is not
 this the carpenter, the carpenter's son ? Is not his mother called
 Mary ? and his brethren, James, and Joses, and Simon, and Ju-

56 das? And his sisters, are they not all here with us? Whence
 57 then hath this *man* all these things? And they were offended in
 him. But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honour,
 save in his own country, and among his own kin, and in his own
 house. **Mk.** 5 And he could do there no mighty works, because
 of their unbelief; save that he laid his hands on a few sick folk,
 6 and healed *them*. And he marvelled because of their unbelief.
M. 35 And Jesus went round about all the cities and villages, teach-
 ing in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom,
 and healing every sickness and every disease among the people.
 36 But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion
 on them, because they fainted, and were scattered abroad as sheep
 37 having no shepherd. Then saith he unto his disciples, The har-
 38 vest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few. Pray ye there-
 fore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into
 his harvest.

Section 63.

The Twelve instructed.

Galilee.

MATTHEW 10 : 1, 5-23. MARK 6 : 7-11. LUKE 9 : 1-5.

M. 1 AND when he had called unto him his twelve disciples, he
 gave them power over unclean spirits, and authority over all
 devils, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness and
 5 all manner of disease. These twelve, Jesus began to send forth
 by two and two, to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal the
 sick. And he commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of
 the Gentiles, and into *any* city of the Samaritans enter ye not.
 6, 7 But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. And as ye
 8 go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand. Heal the
 sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye
 9 have received, freely give. Provide neither gold nor silver, nor
 brass in your purses, *and* take nothing for your journey, save a
 10 staff only: no scrip, no bread, neither shoes, but be shod with
 sandals, neither have two coats apiece. For the workman is wor-
 thy of his meat.
 11 And into whatsoever city or town ye shall enter, inquire who in
 it is worthy: and whatsoever house ye enter into, there abide till

- 12 you depart from that place. And when ye come into an house,
 13 salute it ; and if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon
 14 it : but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you. And
 whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words, when ye
 depart out of that house or city, shake off the very dust from un-
 15 der your feet for a testimony against them. Verily, I say unto
 you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomor-
 rah in the day of judgment, than for that city.
- 16 Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves : be
 17 ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. But beware
 of men : for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will
 18 scourge you in their synagogues : and ye shall be brought before
 governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them
 19 and the Gentiles. But when they deliver you up, take no thought
 how or what ye shall speak : for it shall be given you in that same
 20 hour what ye shall speak. For it is not ye that speak, but the
 21 Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you. And the brother
 shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child :
 and the children shall rise up against *their* parents, and cause them
 22 to be put to death. And ye shall be hated of all *men* for my
 name's sake : but he that endureth to the end shall be saved.
- 23 But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another :
 for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone over the cities
 of Israel, till the Son of man be come.

Section 64.

The Twelve, instructed, go forth.

Galilee.

MATTHEW 10 : 24-42 ; 11 : 1. MARK 6 : 12, 13. LUKE 9 : 6.

- M. 24 THE disciple is not above *his* master, nor the servant above
 25 his lord. It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master,
 and the servant as his lord : if they have called the master of the
 house Beelzebub, how much more *shall they call* them of his house-
 26 hold ? Fear them not therefore : for there is nothing covered,
 that shall not be revealed ; and hid, that shall not be known.
- 27 What I tell you in darkness, *that* speak ye in light, and what ye
 28 hear in the ear, *that* preach ye upon the house-tops. And fear
 not them which will kill the body, but are not able to kill the

soul : but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and
 29 body in hell. Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and one
 30 of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father. But
 31 the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear ye not there-
 fore ; ye are of more value than many sparrows.

32 Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I
 33 confess also before my Father which is in heaven. But whoso-
 ever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my
 34 Father which is in heaven. Think not that I am come to send
 35 peace on earth ; I came not to send peace, but a sword. For I
 am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the
 daughter against her mother, and the daughter-in-law against her
 36 mother-in-law. And a man's foes *shall be* they of his own house-
 37 hold. He that loveth father or mother more than me, is not wor-
 thy of me : and he that loveth son or daughter more than me, is
 38 not worthy of me. And he that taketh not his cross, and follow-
 39 eth after me, is not worthy of me. He that findeth his life shall
 40 lose it : and he that loseth his life for my sake, shall find it. He
 that receiveth you, receiveth me : and he that receiveth me, re-
 41 ceiveth him that sent me. He that receiveth a prophet in the
 name of a prophet, shall receive a prophet's reward : and he that
 receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man, shall
 42 receive a righteous man's reward. And whosoever shall give to
 drink unto one of these little ones a cup of cold *water* only, in the
 name of a disciple, verily I say unto you he shall in no wise lose
 his reward.

1 And it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of commanding
 his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and preach in
 their cities. **Mk.** 12 And they departed and went through the
 13 towns, preaching the gospel, that men should repent. And they
 cast out many devils, and anointed with oil many that were sick,
 and healed everywhere.

Section 65.

Herod holds Jesus to be the Baptist recently beheaded.

MATTHEW 14 : 1, 2, 6-12. MARK 6 : 14-16, 21-29. LUKE 9 : 7-9.

Mk. 14 AND at that time king Herod, the tetrarch, heard of the
 fame of Jesus, and of all that was done by him ; (for his name was

spread abroad.) And he was perplexed, because that it was said of some, that John the Baptist was risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him. Others said, that Elias had appeared ; and others, that it is a prophet, or that one of the old prophets was risen again. But when Herod heard, he said unto his servants, John have I beheaded : but who is this, of whom I hear such things ? This is John the Baptist ; he is risen from the dead ; and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him. And he desired to see him.

And when a convenient day was come, that Herod on his birthday made a supper to his lords, high captains, and chief *estates* of Galilee, and when the daughter of Herodias came in, and danced before them, and pleased Herod, and them that sat with him, the king said unto the damsel, Ask of me whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give *it* thee. And he sware unto her, Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me I will give *it* thee, unto the half of my kingdom. And she went forth, and said unto her mother, What shall I ask ? And she said, The head of John the Baptist. And she being instructed of her mother came in straightway with haste unto the king, and asked, saying, I will that thou give me here, by and by, in a charger, the head of John the Baptist. And the king was exceeding sorry ; *yet* for his oath's sake, and for their sakes which sat with him at meat, he would not reject her. And immediately the king sent an executioner, and commanded his head to be brought, *and* to be given *her*. And he went and beheaded John in the prison ; and brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel ; and the damsel brought it *and* gave it to her mother.

And when his disciples heard *of it*, they came and took up his body, and buried it in a tomb, and went and told Jesus.

Section 66.

The Twelve return. Cross the Lake. Five Thousand fed.

Plain of Butaiha.

MATTHEW 14 : 13-23. MARK 6 : 30-46. LUKE 9 : 10-17. JOHN 6 : 1-15.

* Mk. 30 AND the apostles, when they were returned, gathered themselves together unto Jesus, and told him all things, both what they

31 had done and what they had taught. And when Jesus heard he said unto them, Come ye yourselves apart into a desert place, and rest a while : for there were many coming and going, and they
32 had no leisure so much as to eat. And he took them, and departed thence by ship privately, and went over the sea of Galilee, *which is the sea of Tiberias*, and went aside into a desert place belonging to the city called Bethsaida. And the people saw them
33 departing, and many knew him and ran afoot thither out of all cities, and outwent them, and came together unto him. **J.** 2 And a great multitude when they knew it followed him, because they saw his miracles which he did on them that were diseased.

3 And Jesus went up into a mountain, and there he sat with his
4 disciples. And the passover, a feast of the Jews, was nigh. **Mk.** 34 When Jesus then lifted up *his* eyes and saw a great company come unto him, he was moved with compassion toward them, because they were as sheep not having a shepherd. And he received them, and began to teach them many things, and spake unto them of the kingdom of God, and healed them that had need of healing.

35 And when the day was now far spent, when it was evening, the twelve disciples came to him, and said, This is a desert place,
36 and the time is now far past ; send the multitude away, that they may go into the towns and country round about, and lodge, and
37 buy themselves victuals ; for they have nothing to eat. But Jesus answered, and said unto them, They need not depart, give ye them to eat. **J.** 5 And he saith unto Philip, Whence shall we
6 buy bread that these may eat ? (And this he said to prove him : for he himself knew what he would do.) Philip answered him, Two hundred penny-worth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one may take a little. **Mk.** 37 And they say unto him, Shall we go and buy two hundred penny-worth of bread, and give
38 them to eat ? He saith unto them, How many loaves have ye ? go and see. **J.** 8 And then they knew, one of his disciples, Andrew,
9 Simon Peter's brother, saith unto him, There is a lad here which hath five barley loaves, and two small fishes ; but what are they among so many ? We have no more ; except we should go and buy meat for all this people. He said, Bring them hither to me. **Mk.** 39 Now there was much grass in the place. And he commanded them to make all sit down by companies on the green
40 grass. And they did so, and sat down in ranks, by hundreds and by fifties in a company. **L.** 16 Then he took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed them ; and

- when he had given thanks he brake the loaves, and gave *them* to his disciples to set before the multitude ; and likewise the two fishes he divided among them all. And the disciples distributed to the multitude that were set down, as much as they would.
- 17 And they did all eat, and were all filled. **J.** 12 When they were filled, he said unto his disciples, Gather up the fragments that
- 13 remain, that nothing be lost. Therefore they gathered *them* together, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of the five barley loaves and of the fishes, which remained over and above unto them that had eaten. And they that had eaten were about
- 14 five thousand men, beside women and children. Then those men, when they had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said, This is of a truth that Prophet that should come into the world.
- Mk. 45 And straightway Jesus constrained his disciples to get into the ship, and to go before him to the other side unto Bethsaida,
- 46 while he sent the multitudes away. And when he had sent the multitudes away, when Jesus therefore perceived that they would come and take him by force, to make him a king, he departed again, and went himself alone up into a mountain to pray.

Section 67.

The Night-storm on Galilee. Christ walks on the Sea.

MATTHEW 14 : 24-36. MARK 6 : 47-56. JOHN 6 : 16-21.

- J. 16 And when even was come, his disciples went down unto the
- 17 sea, and entered into a ship, and went over the sea toward Capernaum. And it was now dark, and the ship was in the midst of
- 18 the sea, and Jesus alone on the land was not come to them. And the sea arose by reason of a great wind that blew. **Mk.** 48 And he saw them toiling in rowing ; for the wind was contrary unto them ; and the ship was now in the midst of the sea tossed with waves.

- And about the fourth watch of the night, when they had rowed about five and twenty or thirty furlongs, Jesus cometh unto them,
- 49 walking upon the sea, and would have passed by them. But when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, and drawing nigh unto the ship, they supposed it had been a spirit, and cried out for

50 fear. (For they all saw him and were troubled.) And immediately he talked with them, and saith unto them, Be of good cheer ; it is I ; be not afraid. **M.** 28 And Peter answered him and said, 29 Lord, if it be thou, bid me come to thee on the water. And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he 30 walked on the water, to go to Jesus. But when he saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid ; and beginning to sink, he cried, say- 31 ing, Lord, save me. And immediately Jesus stretched forth *his* hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt ? Then he went up unto them into 32 the ship, and they willingly received him. And when they were come into the ship, the wind ceased ; and immediately the ship 33 was at the land, whither they went. Then they that were in the ship were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondered. For they considered not *the miracle* of the loaves ; for their heart was hardened. And they came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God.

Mk. 53 And when they had passed over, they came into the land of 54 Gennesaret, and drew to the shore. And when they were come out of the ship, and when the men of that place had knowledge 55 of him, straightway they sent out into all the country round about, and began to carry about in beds those that were sick, where they 56 heard he was : and brought unto him all that were diseased. And whithersoever he entered, into villages, or cities, or country, they laid the sick in the streets, and besought him that they might touch, if it were but the border of his garment ; and as many as touched him were made perfectly whole.

Section 63.

Christ the Bread of Life.

Capernaum.

JOHN 6 : 22-40.

22 THE day following, when the people which stood on the other side of the sea saw that there was none other boat there, save that one whereinto his disciples were entered, and that Jesus went not with his disciples into the boat, but *that* his disciples were gone

23 away alone (howbeit there came other boats from Tiberias nigh
unto the place where they did eat bread, after that the Lord had
24 given thanks) : when the people therefore saw that Jesus was not
there, neither his disciples, they also took shipping, and came to
Capernaum, seeking for Jesus.

25 And when they had found him on the other side of the sea,
26 they said unto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither? Jesus an-
swered them and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye seek me,
not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eat of the
27 loaves, and were filled. Labour not for the meat which perisheth,
but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the
Son of man shall give unto you : for him hath God the Father
sealed.

28 Then said they unto him, What shall we do, that we might
29 work the works of God? Jesus answered and said unto them,
This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath
30 sent. They said therefore unto him, What sign showest thou
then, that we may see, and believe thee? What dost thou work?
31 Our fathers did eat manna in the desert : as it is written, He gave
32 them bread from heaven to eat. Then Jesus said unto them,
Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from
heaven ; but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven.
33 For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, and
34 giveth life unto the world. Then said they unto him, Lord, ever-
more give us this bread.

35 And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life : he that com-
eth to me, shall never hunger ; and he that believeth on me, shall
36 never thirst. But I said unto you, That ye also have seen me,
37 and believe not. All that the Father giveth me, shall come to
38 me ; and him that cometh to me, I will in no wise cast out. For
I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will
39 of him that sent me. And this is the Father's will which hath
sent me, that of all which he hath given me, I should lose noth-
40 ing, but should raise it up again at the last day. And this is the
will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and
believeth on him, may have everlasting life : and I will raise him
up at the last day.

Section 69.

Eternal Life by feeding on Christ. Defection.

Capernaum.

JOHN 6 : 41-71 ; 7 : 1.

41 THE Jews then murmured at him, because he said, I am the
42 bread which came down from heaven. And they said, Is not this
Jesus the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how
43 is it then that he saith, I came down from heaven? Jesus there-
fore answered and said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves
44 No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me
45 draw him : and I will raise him up at the last day. It is written
in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man
therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh
46 unto me. Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which
47 is of God, he hath seen the Father. Verily, verily, I say unto you,
48 He that believeth on me hath everlasting life. I am that bread
49 of life. Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are
50 dead. This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a
51 man may eat thereof, and not die. I am the living bread which
came down from heaven : if any man eat of this bread, he shall
live for ever. And the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I
will give for the life of the world.

52 The Jews therefore strove among themselves, saying, How can
53 this man give us *his* flesh to eat? Then Jesus said unto them,
Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of
54 man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you. Whoso eateth
my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life ; and I will
55 raise him up at the last day. For my flesh is meat indeed, and
56 my blood is drink indeed. He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh
57 my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him. As the living Father
hath sent me, and I live by the Father : so he that eateth me,
58 even he shall live by me. This is that bread which came down
from heaven : not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead :
he that eateth of this bread shall live for ever.

59 These things said he in the synagogue, as he taught in Caper-
60 naum. Many therefore of his disciples, when they had heard *this*,
61 said, This is an hard saying ; who can hear it? When Jesus knew
in himself that his disciples murmured at it, he said unto them,

62 Doth this offend you? *What* and if ye shall see the Son of man
 63 ascend up where he was before? It is the spirit that quickeneth;
 the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, *they*
 64 are spirit, and *they* are life. But there are some of you that be-
 lieve not. For Jesus knew from the beginning who they were
 65 that believed not, and who should betray him. And he said,
 Therefore said I unto you, that no man can come unto me, except
 it were given unto him of my Father.

66 From that *time* many of his disciples went back, and walked no
 67 more with him. Then said Jesus unto the twelve, Will ye also
 68 go away? Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall
 69 we go? thou hast the words of eternal life. And we believe, and
 70 are sure that thou art that Christ, the Son of the living God. Je-
 sus answered them, Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you
 71 is a devil? He spake of Judas Iscariot *the son* of Simon: for he
 it was that should betray him, being one of the twelve.

1 After these things Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not
 walk in Jewry, because the Jews sought to kill him.

Section 70.

Pharisaic Traditions. Need of Inward Purity.

Capernaum.

MATTHEW 15 : 1-20. MARK 7 : 1-23.

Mk. 1 THEN came together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of
 2 the scribes, which came from Jerusalem. And when they saw
 some of his disciples eat bread with defiled, that is to say, with
 3 unwashen hands, they found fault. For the Pharisees, and all
 the Jews, except they wash *their* hands oft, eat not, holding the
 4 tradition of the elders. And *when they come* from the market, ex-
 cept they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be,
 which they have received to hold, as the washing of cups, and
 pots, and of brazen vessels, and tables.

5 Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy
 disciples according to, *but* transgress, the tradition of the elders?
 for they wash not their hands when they eat bread. **M.** 3 But
 he answered and said unto them, Why do ye also transgress the

commandment of God by your tradition? **Mk.** 8 For, laying aside the commandments of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups : and many other such like things
9 ye do. And he said unto them, Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition. **M.** 4 For God commanded by Moses, saying, Honour thy father and thy mother : and, He that curseth father or mother, let him die the
5 death. But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his father or mother, *It is Corban*, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me ; and honour not his father or his mother, *he shall be free.* **Mk.** 12 And ye suffer him no more to do aught for
13 his father or his mother ; making the word of God of none effect by your tradition, which ye have delivered : and many such like things do ye. **M.** 7 Ye hypocrites, well hath Esaias prophesied
8 of you, saying, as it is written, This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips, but their
9 heart is far from me. Howbeit, in vain do they worship me, teaching *for* doctrines the commandments of men.

Mk. 14 And when he had called all the people, he said unto them,
15 Harken unto me every one *of you*, and understand : There is nothing from without a man, that entering into him can defile him. Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth a man ; but the things which come out of him : that which cometh out of the
16 mouth, this defileth a man. If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.

17 And when he was entered into the house from the people, then came his disciples, and said unto him, **M.** 12 Knowest thou that
13 the Pharisees were offended, after they heard this saying? But he answered and said, Every plant, which my heavenly Father
14 hath not planted, shall be rooted up. Let them alone : they be blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both
15 shall fall into the ditch. Then his disciples asked him concerning the parable ; and Peter said unto him, Declare unto us this para-
16 ble. And Jesus said unto them, Are ye also yet without understanding? **Mk.** 18 Do ye not perceive, that whatsoever thing from without entereth at the mouth into the man, it cannot defile
19 him ; because it entereth not into his heart, but into the belly,
20 and is cast out into the draught, purging all meats? And he said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man : for those things which proceed out of the mouth come forth from the
21 heart ; and they defile the man. For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications,

22 tions, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an
 23 evil eye, false witness, blasphemies, pride, foolishness. All these
 evil things come from within, and these are *the things* which defile
 a man : but to eat with unwashen hands defileth not a man.

Section 71.

The Syrophenician Mother's Faith. Heals One Deaf and Dumb.

Borders of Phenicia. Decapolis.

MATTHEW 15 : 21-29. MARK 7 : 24-37.

Mk. 24 AND from thence Jesus arose and departed into the borders
 or coasts of Tyre and Sidon ; and entered into an house, and
 25 would have no man know *it* ; but he could not be hid. For be-
 hold, a woman of Canaan, out of the same coasts, whose young
 daughter had an unclean spirit, heard of him, and came, and fell
 at his feet : and cried unto him, saying, Have mercy on me, O
 Lord, *thou* Son of David ; my daughter is grievously vexed with a
 26 devil. (The woman was a Greek, a Syrophenician by nation,) and
 she besought him that he would cast forth the devil out of her
 daughter. **M.** 23 But he answered her not a word. And his dis-
 ciples came and besought him, saying, Send her away ; for she
 24 crieth after us. But he answered and said, I am not sent but unto
 25 the lost sheep of the house of Israel. Then came she and wor-
 26 shipped him, saying, Lord, help me. But Jesus answered and
 said unto her, Let the children first be filled ; for it is not meet to
 27 take the children's bread, and to cast *it* unto the dogs. And she
 answered and said unto him, Truth, Lord, yet the dogs under
 the table eat of the children's crumbs, which fall from their mas-
 28 ter's table. Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman,
 great is thy faith : for this saying, be it unto thee even as thou
 wilt. Go thy way : the devil is gone out of thy daughter.
 And her daughter was made whole from that very hour. **Mk.** 30
 And when she was come to her house, she found the devil gone
 out, and her daughter laid upon the bed.
 31 And again, departing from the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, he
 came unto the sea of Galilee, through the midst of the coasts of
 32 Decapolis. And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and had

an impediment in his speech ; and they beseech him to put his
 33 hand upon him. And he took him aside from the multitude, and
 put his fingers into his ears, and he spit, and touched his tongue ;
 34 and looking up to heaven, he sighed, and saith unto him, Eph-
 35 phatha, that is, Be opened. And straightway his ears were
 opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake
 36 plain. And he charged them that they should tell no man : but
 the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they
 37 published *it* ; and were beyond measure astonished, saying, He
 hath done all things well : he maketh both the deaf to hear, and
 the dumb to speak.

Section 72.

Multitudes healed. Four Thousand fed.

East Side of the Lake.

MATTHEW 15 : 29-39. MARK 8 : 1-10.

M. 29, 30 AND he went up into a mountain, and sat down there. And
 great multitudes came unto him, having with them *those that were*
 lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them
 31 down at Jesus' feet ; and he healed them ; insomuch that the
 multitude wondered, when they saw the dumb to speak, the
 maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blind to see : and
 they glorified the God of Israel.

Mk. 1 In those days the multitude being very great, and having
 nothing to eat, Jesus called his disciples *unto him*, and saith unto
 2 them, I have compassion on the multitude, because they have now
 3 been with me three days, and have nothing to eat ; and I will not
 send them away fasting to their own houses, lest they faint in the
 4 way : for divers of them came from far. And his disciples an-
 swered, and say unto him, From whence should we have so much
 bread here in the wilderness, as to satisfy so great a multitude ?
 5 And Jesus asked them, How many loaves have ye ? And they
 6 said, Seven, and a few little fishes. And he commanded the peo-
 ple to sit down on the ground. And he took the seven loaves, and
 gave thanks, and brake *them*, and gave to his disciples to set be-
 7 fore *them* ; and they did set *them* before the people. And they
 had a few small fishes : and he blessed, and commanded to set

- 8 them also before *them* : so they did all eat, and were filled ; and they took up of the broken *meat* that was left, seven baskets full. **M.** 38 And they that did eat were four thousand men, beside women and children.
- 39 And he sent away the multitude ; and straightway he entered into a ship with his disciples, and came into the coasts of Magdala, into the parts of Dalmanutha.

Section 73.

Accuses Pharisees, and cautions Disciples.

Magdala. Plain of Butaiha.

MATTHEW 16 : 1-12. MARK 8 : 11-21.

- M.** 1 THE Pharisees also with the Sadducees came forth, and began to question with him ; and, tempting him, desired that he would shew them a sign from heaven. He answered and said unto them, When it is evening, ye say, *It will be fair weather*, for the sky is red ; and in the morning, *It will be foul weather to-day*, for the sky is red and lowering. O ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky ; but can ye not *discern* the signs of the times ? **Mk.** 12 And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, Why doth this wicked and adulterous generation seek after a sign ? Verily, I say unto you, there shall no sign be given to this generation,
- 13 but the sign of the prophet Jonas. And he left them, and entering into the ship again, departed to the other side.
- 14 And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread ; neither had they in the ship with them more than one loaf. Then Jesus charged them, saying, Take heed, and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees, and of the leaven of Herod. And they reasoned among themselves, saying, *It is because we have taken no bread.* Which when Jesus perceived, he said unto them, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among yourselves, because ye have brought no bread ? Perceive ye not yet, neither understand ? Have ye your heart yet
- 18 hardened ? Having eyes, see ye not ? And having ears, hear ye not ? And do ye not remember ? When I brake the five loaves among the five thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took

20 ye up? They say unto him, Twelve. And when the seven loaves among the four thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? And they said, Seven. **M.** 11 And he said unto them, How is it that ye do not understand that I spake *it* not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the
12 Pharisees and of the Sadducees? Then understood they how that he bade *them* not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

Section 74.

Heals a Blind Man. Peter's Great Confession and Christ's Reply.

Bethsaida Julias. Cesarea Philippi.

MATTHEW 16 : 13-20. MARK 8 : 22-30. LUKE 9 : 18-21.

Mk. 22 AND he cometh to Bethsaida ; and they bring a blind man
23 unto him, and besought him to touch him. And he took the blind man by the hand, and led him out of the town ; and when he had spit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he asked him if he
24 saw aught. And he looked up, and said, I see men as trees walk-
25 ing. After that he put *his* hands again upon his eyes, and made him look up : and he was restored, and saw every man clearly.
26 And he sent him away to his house, saying, Neither go into the town, nor tell *it* to any in the town.
27 And Jesus went out, and his disciples, into the coasts *and* towns of Cesarea Philippi. And it came to pass, as he was alone praying, his disciples were with him. And by the way he asked them,
28 saying, Whom do men say, that I, the Son of man, am? And they answered, Some *say that thou art* John the Baptist ; but some *say*, Elias ; and others, Jeremias, or that one of the old prophets
29 is risen again. And he saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am? **M.** 16 And Simon Peter answered and said unto him, Thou
17 art the Christ, the Son of the living God. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jona : for flesh and blood hath not revealed *it* unto thee, but my Father which is
18 in heaven. And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and on this rock I will build my church ; and the gates of hell shall

19 not prevail against it. And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven ; and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven : and whatsoever thou shalt loose on
20 earth, shall be loosed in heaven. Then he straitly charged and commanded his disciples, that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ.

Section 75.

Peter rebuked, and Disciples urged to Self-denial.

Cesarea Philippi.

MATTHEW 16 : 21-28. MARK 8 : 31-38 ; 9 : 1. LUKE 9 : 22-27.

M. 21 AND from that time forth began Jesus to show unto his disciples, and to teach them, how that he, the Son of man, must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and of the chief priests, and scribes, and be killed, and be
22 raised again the third day. And he spake that saying openly. Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord ; this shall not be unto thee. **Mk.** 33 But when he had turned about, and looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behind me, Satan : thou art an offence unto me : for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men.

34 And when he had called the people *unto him*, with his disciples also, he said unto them all, If any *man* will come after me, let him
35 deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me. For whosoever will save his life shall lose it : but whosoever will lose
36 his life for my sake and the gospel's, the same shall save it. For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and
37 lose his own soul, or be cast away ? Or what shall a man give in
38 exchange for his soul ? Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation, of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his own glory, and in *his* Father's, and of the holy angels.

M. 27 For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father, with his angels ; and then he shall reward every man according to
28 his works. And he said unto them, Verily, I say unto you, That

there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the kingdom of God come with power, the Son of man coming in his kingdom.

Section 76.

The Transfiguration.

Spur of Mount Hermon.

MATTHEW 17 : 1-13. MARK 9 : 2-13. LUKE 9 : 28-36.

- L. 28 AND it came to pass after six days, *or*, about an eight days after these sayings, Jesus taketh Peter, and James, and John his brother, and leadeth them up into an high mountain apart by
 29 themselves, to pray. And as he prayed, he was transfigured before them, *and* the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment became shining, exceeding white as snow, *or* as the light : so as no fuller on earth
 30 can white them. And, behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elias ; who appeared in glory, and spake
 31 of his decease which he should accomplish at Jerusalem. But Peter and they that were with him were heavy with sleep : and when they were awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that
 32 stood with him. And it came to pass, as they departed from him, Peter said unto Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here ; and if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles ; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias ; not knowing what he said. For
 33 he wist not what to say : for they were sore afraid. While yet he thus spake, behold, there came a bright cloud that overshadowed
 34 them : and they feared as they entered into the cloud. And, behold, there came a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased ; hear ye him. **M.** 6 And when the disciples heard *it*, they fell on their face, and were sore
 35 afraid. And when the voice was past, Jesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid. And suddenly, when they had lifted up their eyes and had looked round about, they saw no man any more, save Jesus only with themselves.
 7 And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them that they should tell no man what things they had seen, till the Son of man were risen again from the dead. **Mk.** 10 And they

kept that saying with themselves, questioning one with another what the rising from the dead should mean. And they told no man in those days any of those things which they had seen.

- 11 And his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the scribes,
12 that Elias must first come? And he answered, and told them,
13 Elias truly cometh first, and restoreth all things. But I say unto you, that Elias is indeed come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed, as it is written of him : **M.** 12 likewise also it is written of the Son of man that he
13 must suffer many things of them, and be set at nought. Then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.

Section 77.

Expels a Demon which the Nine could not cast out.

Foot of Mt. Hermon. Cesarea Philippi.

MATTHEW 17 : 14-21. MARK 9 : 14-30. LUKE 9 : 37-43.

- L. 37 AND it came to pass, that on the next day, when they were come down from the hill, much people met him. **Mk.** 14 And when he came to *his* disciples, he saw a great multitude about
15 them, and the scribes questioning with them. And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and
16 running to *him* saluted him. And he asked the scribes, What
17 question ye with them? And, behold, a man of the company came to him, and kneeling down, cried out, saying, Master, I have brought unto thee my son. I beseech thee, look upon *and* have mercy on *him* : for he is mine only child. For he is a lunatic, and sore vexed, *and* hath a dumb spirit. And, lo, the spirit taketh
18 him, and he suddenly crieth out ; and wheresoever he taketh him, he teareth him, that he foameth again and gnasheth with his teeth and pineth away ; and bruising him, hardly departeth from him. And I brought him to thy disciples, and besought *them*
19 to cast him out, and they could not cure him. Then Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? Bring thy son hither unto me.
20 And they brought him unto him. And as he was yet a coming, when he saw him, straightway the devil threw him down, and tare

21 him, and he fell on the ground, and wallowed, foaming. And he
 asked his father, How long is it ago since this came unto him? And
 22 he said, Of a child. And often times it hath cast him into the fire
 and into the waters to destroy him : and if thou canst do any
 23 thing, have compassion on us, and help us. Jesus said unto him,
 If thou canst believe, all things *are* possible to him that believeth.
 24 And straightway the father of the child cried out, and said with
 25 tears, Lord, I believe ; help thou mine unbelief. When Jesus
 saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the un-
 clean spirit, saying unto him, *Thou* dumb and deaf spirit, I charge
 26 thee, come out of him, and enter no more into him. And *the*
spirit cried, and rent him sore, and came out of him : and he was
 27 as one dead ; insomuch that many said, He is dead. But Jesus
 took him by the hand, and lifted him up ; and he arose. And the
 child was cured from that very hour ; and *he* delivered him again
 to his father. And they were all amazed at the mighty power of
 God.

28 And when he was come into the house, then came the disciples
 to Jesus privately, and asked him, Why could not we cast him
 out? **M.** 20 And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbe-
 lief : for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mus-
 tard-seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence unto
 yonder place, and it shall remove ; and nothing shall be impos-
 21 sible unto you. Howbeit, this kind can come forth by nothing,
 but by prayer and fasting.

Mk. 30 And they departed thence, and passed through Galilee ;
 and he would not that any man should know *it*.

Section 78.

Foretells his Death and Resurrection. The Temple Tribute.

Passing through Galilee.

MATTHEW 17 : 22-27. MARK 9 : 31-33. LUKE 9 : 43-45.

L. 43 **BUT** while they wondered every one at all things which Jesus
 did, and while they abode in Galilee, Jesus taught his disciples
 44 and said unto them, Let these sayings sink down into your ears :
 for the Son of man shall be betrayed and delivered into the hands
 of men, and they shall kill him ; and after that he is killed, he

45 shall rise again the third day. But they understood not that saying, and it was hid from them, that they perceived it not : and they were afraid to ask him of that saying. And they were exceeding sorry.

M. 24 And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received tribute *money* came to Peter, and said, Doth not your Master pay
25 tribute? He saith, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take custom or tribute? of their
26 own children, or of strangers? Peter saith unto him, Of strangers.
27 Jesus saith unto him, Then are the children free. Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast an hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up : and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece of money : that take, and give unto them for me and thee.

Section 79.

Ambition rebuked. The Little Child.

Capernaum.

MATTHEW 18 : 1-9. MARK 9 : 33-50. LUKE 9 : 46-50.

M. 1 At the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven? **Mk.** 33 And being in the house, he asked them, What was it that ye disputed among
34 yourselves by the way? But they held their peace : for by the way they had disputed among themselves, which of them should be greatest.

35 And Jesus, perceiving the thought of their heart, sat down, and called the twelve, and saith unto them, If any man desire to be first, *the same shall be last of all, and servant of all.*

M. 2 And he called a little child unto him, and took and set him in
3 the midst of them, and said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into
4 the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven. And when he had taken him in his arms, he said unto
5 them, Whoso shall receive one such little child in my name, receiveth me : and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth not me, but

6166

him that sent me ; for he that is least among you all, the same shall be great.

Mk. 38 And John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name ; and he followeth not us ; and we forbade him, because he followeth not with us. But Jesus said, Forbid him not : for there is no man which shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speak evil of me. For he that is not against us, is on our part. For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink, in my name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward. But whosoever shall offend one of these little ones that believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into *and* drowned in the depth of the sea. **M.** 7 Woe unto the world because of offences ! for it must needs be that offences come : but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh ! **Mk.** 43 Wherefore if thy hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast *it* from thee : it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, than having two hands to go into hell, to be cast into the fire that never shall be quenched : where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off, and cast *it* from thee : it is better for thee to enter halt into life, than having two feet to be cast into hell, into everlasting fire : where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee : it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God, into life, with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into hell-fire : where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. For every one shall be salted with fire, and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt. Salt is good : but if the salt have lost his saltness, wherewith will ye season it ? Have salt in yourselves, and have peace one with another.

Section 80.

**Tenderness toward his Own. Offences among Christians.
Promises to Two or Three.**

Capernaum.

MATTHEW 18 : 10-20.

10 TAKE heed that ye despise not one of these little ones : for I say unto you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face

11 of my Father which is in heaven. For the Son of man is come to
 12 save that which was lost. How think ye? if a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that
 13 which is gone astray? And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth more of that *sheep*, than of the ninety and
 14 nine which went not astray. Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.

15 Moreover if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone : if he shall hear thee,
 16 thou hast gained thy brother. But if he will not hear *thee*, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three
 17 witnesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell *it* unto the church : but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican.
 18 Verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven : and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven.

19 Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth, as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them
 20 of my Father which is in heaven. For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

Section 81.

How to forgive. The Unmerciful Servant.

Capernaum.

MATTHEW 18 : 21-35 ; 19 : 1.

21 THEN came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my
 22 brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times? Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times : but,
 23 Until seventy times seven. Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants. And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto
 24 him, which owed him ten thousand talents. But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife

26 and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. The
 servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord,
 27 have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. Then the lord of
 that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and
 28 forgave him the debt. But the same servant went out, and found
 one of his fellow-servants, which owed him an hundred pence :
 and he laid hands on him, and took *him* by the throat, saying
 29 Pay me that thou owest. And his fellow-servant fell down at his
 feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will
 30 pay thee all. And he would not : but went and cast him into
 31 prison, till he should pay the debt. So when his fellow-servants
 saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto
 32 their lord all that was done. Then his lord, after that he had
 called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee
 33 all that debt, because thou desiredst me: shouldst not thou also
 have had compassion on thy fellow-servant, even as I had pity on
 34 thee? And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormen-
 35 tors, till he should pay all that was due unto him. So likewise
 shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts
 forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.

1 And it came to pass that when Jesus had finished these sayings,
 he departed from Galilee.

Section 82.

Instructing and sending out the Seventy.

Casernaum.

LUKE 10 : 1-16.

1 AFTER these things, the Lord appointed other seventy also, and
 sent them two and two before his face into every city, and place,
 2 whither he himself would come. Therefore said he unto them,
 The harvest truly *is* great, but the labourers *are* few : pray ye
 therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth la-
 3 bourers into his harvest. Go your ways : behold, I send you forth
 4 as lambs among wolves. Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor
 5 shoes : and salute no man by the way. And into whatsoever
 6 house ye enter, first say, Peace *be* to this house. And if the son

of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon it : if not, it shall
 7 turn to you again. And in the same house remain, eating and
 drinking such things as they give : for the labourer is worthy of
 his hire. Go not from house to house.

8 And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat
 9 such things as are set before you. And heal the sick that are
 therein, and say unto them, The kingdom of God is come nigh
 10 unto you. But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive
 you not, go your ways out into the streets of the same, and say,
 11 Even the very dust of your city which cleaveth on us, we do wipe
 off against you : notwithstanding, be ye sure of this, that the
 12 kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. But I say unto you, that
 it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom than for that city.

13 Woe unto thee, Chorazin ! woe unto thee, Bethsaida ! for if the
 mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been
 done in you, they had a great while ago repented, sitting in sack-
 14 cloth and ashes. But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon
 15 at the judgment, than for you. And thou, Capernaum, which art
 16 exalted to heaven, shalt be thrust down to hell. He that heareth
 you, heareth me ; and he that despiseth you, despiseth me ; and
 he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me.

Section 83.

**Final Departure from Galilee. Not received by Samaritans.
 Ten Lepers.**

LUKE 9 : 51-56 ; 17 : 11-19. JOHN 7 : 2-10.

J. 2, 3 Now the Jews' feast of tabernacles was at hand. His brethren
 therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into Judea, that
 4 thy disciples also may see the works that thou doest. For *there* is
 no man *that* doeth any thing in secret, and he himself seeketh to
 be known openly. If thou do these things, shew thyself to the
 5, 6 world. For neither did his brethren believe in him. Then Jesus
 said unto them, My time is not yet come : but your time is alway
 7 ready. The world cannot hate you ; but me it hateth, because I
 8 testify of it, that the works thereof are evil. Go ye up unto this
 feast : I go not up yet unto this feast ; for my time is not yet full
 9 come. When he had said these words unto them, he abode *still*

10 in Galilee. But when his brethren were gone up, then went he also up unto the feast, not openly, but as it were in secret.

L. 51 And it came to pass, when the time was come that he should
52 be received up, he steadfastly set his face to go to Jerusalem, and sent messengers before his face : and they went and entered into
53 a village of the Samaritans, to make ready for him. And they did not receive him, because his face was as though he would go to
54 Jerusalem. And when his disciples James and John saw *this*, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from
55 heaven, and consume them, even as Elias did? But he turned, and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit
56 ye are of. For the Son of man is not come to destroy men's lives, but to save *them*. And they went to another village.

11 And it came to pass, as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed
12 through the midst of Samaria and Galilee. And as he entered into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers,
13 which stood afar off : and they lifted up *their* voices, and said,
14 Jesus, Master, have mercy on us. And when he saw *them*, he said unto them, Go shew yourselves unto the priests. And it came to
15 pass, that, as they went, they were cleansed. And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud
16 voice glorified God, and fell down on *his* face at his feet, giving
17 him thanks : and he was a Samaritan. And Jesus answering, said,
18 Were there not ten cleansed? but where *are* the nine? There are not found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger.
19 And he said unto him, Arise, go thy way : thy faith hath made thee whole.

Section 84.

At the Feast of Tabernacles. Officers sent to take Him.

The Temple.

JOHN 7 : 11-36.

11 THEN the Jews sought him at the feast, and said, Where is he?
12 And there was much murmuring among the people concerning him : for some said, He is a good man : others said, Nay ; but he
13 deceiveth the people. Howbeit, no man spake openly of him, for fear of the Jews.

14 Now about the midst of the feast, Jesus went up into the temple
15 and taught. And the Jews marvelled, saying, How knoweth this
16 man letters, having never learned? Jesus answered them, and
17 said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me. If any man
will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of
18 God, or *whether* I speak of myself. He that speaketh of himself,
seeketh his own glory : but he that seeketh his glory that sent
19 him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in him. Did
not Moses give you the law, and *yet* none of you keepeth the law?
20 Why go ye about to kill me? The people answered and said,
21 Thou has a devil : who goeth about to kill thee? Jesus answered
and said unto them, I have done one work, and ye all marvel.
22 Moses therefore gave unto you circumcision, (not because it is of
Moses, but of the fathers :) and ye on the sabbath day circumsise
23 a man. If a man on the sabbath day receive circumcision, that
the law of Moses should not be broken : are ye angry at me, be-
cause I have made a man every whit whole on the sabbath-day?
24 Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judg-
ment.

25 Then said some of them of Jerusalem, Is not this he whom they
26 seek to kill? But lo, he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing
unto him. Do the rulers know indeed that this is the very Christ?
27 Howbeit, we know this man, whence he is : but when Christ
28 cometh, no man knoweth whence he is. Then cried Jesus in the
temple, as he taught, saying, Ye both know me, and ye know
whence I am : and I am not come of myself, but he that sent me
29 is true, whom ye know not. But I know him ; for I am from him,
and he hath sent me.

30 Then they sought to take him : but no man laid hands on him,
31 because his hour was not yet come. And many of the people be-
lieved on him, and said, When Christ cometh, will he do more
32 miracles than these which this *man* hath done? The Pharisees
heard that the people murmured such things concerning him :
and the Pharisees and the chief priests sent officers to take him.

33 Then said Jesus unto them, Yet a little while am I with you,
34 and *then* I go unto him that sent me. Ye shall seek me, and shall
35 not find *me* : and where I am, *thither* ye cannot come. Then said
the Jews among themselves, Whither will he go, that we shall not
find him? will he go unto the dispersed among the Gentiles, and
36 teach the Gentiles? What *manner of* saying is this that he said,
Ye shall seek me, and shall not find *me* : and where I am, *thither*
ye cannot come?

Section 85.

The Invitation on the Great Feast-Day. Officers Return.

The Temple.

JOHN 7 : 37-53.

37 In the last day, that great *day* of the feast, Jesus stood and cried,
 38 saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink. He
 that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly
 39 shall flow rivers of living water. (But this spake he of the Spirit,
 which they that believe on him should receive, for the Holy
 Ghost was not yet *given*, because that Jesus was not yet glorified.)
 40 Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, said,
 41 Of a truth this is the Prophet. Others said, This is the Christ.
 42 But some said, Shall Christ come out of Galilee? Hath not the
 scripture said, That Christ cometh of the seed of David, and out
 43 of the town of Bethlehem, where David was? So there was a di-
 44 vision among the people because of him. And some of them
 would have taken him ; but no man laid hands on him.
 45 Then came the officers to the chief priests and Pharisees ; and
 46 they said unto them, Why have ye not brought him? The offi-
 47 cers answered, Never man spake like this man. Then answered
 48 them the Pharisees, Are ye also deceived? Have any of the rulers,
 49 or of the Pharisees believed on him? But this people who know-
 50 eth not the law are cursed. Nicodemus saith unto them (he that
 51 came to Jesus by night, being one of them), Doth our law judge
 52 *any* man before it hear him, and know what he doeth? They
 answered and said unto him, Art thou also of Galilee? Search,
 53 and look : for out of Galilee ariseth no prophet. And every man
 went unto his own house.

Section 86.

The Woman and her Accusers. The Light of the World.

The Temple.

JOHN 8 : 1-20.

1, 2 JESUS went unto the mount of Olives : and early in the morn-
 ing he came again into the temple, and all the people came unto
 him ; and he sat down and taught them.

- 3 And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken
4 in adultery : and when they had set her in the midst, they say
unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very
5 act. Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be
6 stoned : but what sayest thou ? This they said, tempting him,
that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down,
and with *his* finger wrote on the ground, *as though he heard them*
7 *not*. So when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself,
and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him
8 first cast a stone at her. And again he stooped down, and wrote
9 on the ground. And they which heard *it*, being convicted by *their*
own conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, *even*
unto the last : and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing
10 in the midst. When Jesus had lifted up himself, and saw none
but the woman, he said unto her, Woman, where are those thine
11 accusers ? hath no man condemned thee ? She saith, No man,
Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee :
go, and sin no more.
- 12 Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of
the world : he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but
13 shall have the light of life. The Pharisees therefore said unto
14 him, Thou bearest record of thyself ; thy record is not true. Je-
sus answered and said unto them, Though I bear record of my-
self, *yet* my record is true : for I know whence I came, and
whither I go : but ye cannot tell whence I come, and whither I
15, 16 go. Ye judge after the flesh, I judge no man. And yet if I
judge, my judgment is true : for I am not alone, but I and the
17 Father that sent me. It is also written in your law, that the tes-
18 timony of two men is true. I am one that bear witness of my-
19 self ; and the Father that sent me, beareth witness of me. Then
said they unto him, Where is thy Father ? Jesus answered, Ye
neither know me, nor my Father : if ye had known me, ye should
have known my Father also.
- 20 These words spake Jesus in the treasury, as he taught in the
temple : and no man laid hands on him ; for his hour was not yet
come.

Section 87.

Severe Denunciation of the Jews.

The Temple.

JOHN 8 : 21-47.

21 THEN said Jesus again unto them, I go my way, and ye shall
 seek me, and shall die in your sins : whither I go, ye cannot
 22 come. Then said the Jews, Will he kill himself ? because he
 23 saith, Whither I go, ye cannot come. And he said unto them,
 Ye are from beneath ; I am from above : ye are of this world ; I
 24 am not of this world. I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die
 in your sins : for if ye believe not that I am *he*, ye shall die in
 25 your sins. Then said they unto him, Who art thou ? And Jesus
 saith unto them, Even *the same* that I said unto you from the be-
 26 ginning. I have many things to say, and to judge of you : but he
 that sent me, is true ; and I speak to the world those things
 27 which I have heard of him. They understood not that he spake
 28 to them of the Father. Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have
 lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am *he*, and
 that I do nothing of myself ; but as my Father hath taught me, I
 29 speak these things. And he that sent me is with me : the Father
 hath not left me alone ; for I do always those things that please
 him.
 30, 31 As he spake these words, many believed on him. Then said
 Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my
 32 word, *then* are ye my disciples indeed ; and ye shall know the
 33 truth, and the truth shall make you free. They answered him,
 We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man :
 34 how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free ? Jesus answered them,
 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin is the
 35 servant of sin. And the servant abideth not in the house for ever,
 36 *but* the Son abideth ever. If the Son therefore shall make you
 37 free, ye shall be free indeed. I know that ye are Abraham's seed ;
 38 but ye seek to kill me, because my word hath no place in you. I
 speak that which I have seen with my Father : and ye do that
 39 which ye have seen with your father. They answered and said
 unto him, Abraham is our father. Jesus saith unto them, If ye
 40 were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham. But
 now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which
 41 I have heard of God : this did not Abraham. Ye do the deeds of

your father. Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication ; we have one Father, *even* God. Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me : for I proceeded forth and came from God ; neither came I of myself, but he sent me. Why do ye not understand my speech ? *even* because ye cannot hear my word. Ye are of *your* father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do : he was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth ; because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own : for he is a liar, and the father of it. And because I tell *you* the truth, ye believe me not. Which of you convinceth me of sin ? And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me ? He that is of God, heareth God's words : ye therefore hear *them* not, because ye are not of God.

Section 88.

The Jews attempt to stone Him.

The Temple.

JOHN 8 : 48-59.

THEN answered the Jews, and said unto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a devil ? Jesus answered, I have not a devil ; but I honour my Father, and ye do dishonour me. And I seek not mine own glory : there is one that seeketh and judgeth. Verily, verily, I say unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death. Then said the Jews unto him, Now we know that thou hast a devil. Abraham is dead, and the prophets ; and thou sayest, If a man keep my saying, he shall never taste of death. Art thou greater than our father Abraham, which is dead ? and the prophets are dead : whom makest thou thyself ? Jesus answered, If I honour myself, my honour is nothing : it is my Father that honoureth me, of whom ye say, that he is your God : yet ye have not known him ; but I know him : and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be a liar like unto you : but I know him, and keep his saying. Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day : and he saw *it*, and was glad. Then said the Jews unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham ? Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am.

- 59 Then took they up stones to cast at him : but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by.
-

Section 89.

The Seventy return. The Good Samaritan.

Near Jerusalem.

LUKE 10 : 17-37.

- 17 AND the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even
18 the devils are subject unto us through thy name. And he said
19 unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven. Behold,
I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and
over all the power of the enemy : and nothing shall by any means
20 hurt you. Notwithstanding, in this rejoice not, that the spirits
are subject unto you ; but rather rejoice, because your names are
written in heaven.
- 21 In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said, I thank thee, O
Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things
from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes :
22 even so, Father ; for so it seemed good in thy sight. All things
are delivered to me of my Father : and no man knoweth who the
Son is, but the Father ; and who the Father is, but the Son, and
he to whom the Son will reveal *him*.
- 23 And he turned him unto *his* disciples, and said privately,
24 Blessed *are* the eyes which see the things that ye see. For I tell
you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see those
things which ye see, and have not seen *them* ; and to hear those
things which ye hear, and have not heard *them*.
- 25 And behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, say-
26 ing, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life ? He said unto
27 him, What is written in the law ? how readest thou ? And he
answering said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy
heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with
28 all thy mind ; and thy neighbour as thyself. And he said unto
him, Thou hast answered right : this do, and thou shalt live.
- 29 But he, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is
30 my neighbour ? And Jesus answering, said, A certain *man* went
down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, which

stripped him of his raiment, and wounded *him*, and departed,
 31 leaving *him* half dead. And by chance there came down a certain
 priest that way ; and when he saw him, he passed by on the other
 32 side. And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and
 33 looked on *him*, and passed by on the other side. But a certain
 Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was : and when he
 34 saw him, he had compassion on *him*, and went to *him*, and bound
 up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his own
 35 beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him. And on
 the morrow, when he departed, he took out two pence, and gave
them to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him ; and what-
 soever thou spendest more, when I come again, I will repay thee.
 36 Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour unto him
 37 that fell among the thieves ? And he said, He that showed mercy
 on him. Then said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.

Section 90.

Martha and Mary. How to pray.

Bethany.

LUKE 10 : 38-42 ; 11 : 1-13.

38 Now it came to pass, as they went, that he entered into a cer-
 tain village : and a certain woman, named Martha, received him
 39 into her house. And she had a sister called Mary, which also sat
 40 at Jesus' feet, and heard his word. But Martha was cumbered
 about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou
 not care that my sister hath left me to serve alone ? bid her there-
 41 fore that she help me. And Jesus answered, and said unto her,
 Martha, Martha, thou art careful, and troubled about many things :
 42 but one thing is needful ; and Mary hath chosen that good part,
 which shall not be taken away from her.

1 And it came to pass, that as he was praying in a certain place,
 when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach
 2 us to pray, as John also taught his disciples. And he said unto
 them, When ye pray, say, Our Father which art in heaven, hal-
 lowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as
 3 in heaven, so in earth. Give us day by day our daily bread.
 4 And forgive us our sins ; for we also forgive every one that is in-

debted to us. And lead us not into temptation ; but deliver us from evil.

- 5 And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say unto him, Friend, lend
6 me three loaves ; for a friend of mine in his journey is come to
7 me, and I have nothing to set before him : and he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not : the door is now shut, and
8 my children are with me in bed ; I cannot rise and give thee. I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.
- 9 And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you ; seek, and
10 ye shall find ; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. For every one that asketh, receiveth ; and he that seeketh, findeth ; and to
11 him that knocketh, it shall be opened. If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone ? or if he
12 ask a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent ? or if he shall ask
13 an egg, will he offer him a scorpion ? If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children : how much more shall *your* heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him ?

Section 91.

Imparts Sight to One born blind. The Jews' Inquiry.

A Street of Jerusalem. The Temple.

JOHN 9 : 1-23.

- 1 AND as *Jesus* passed by, he saw a man which was blind from his
2 birth. And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin,
3 this man, or his parents, that he was born blind ? *Jesus* answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents : but that the works
4 of God should be made manifest in him. I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day : the night cometh, when no
5 man can work. As long as I am in the world, I am the light of
6 the world. When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he anointed the eyes of the blind
7 man with the clay, and said unto him, Go, wash in the pool of Siloam (which is by interpretation, Sent). He went his way therefore, and washed, and came seeing.

8 The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seen him
 9 that he was blind, said Is not this he that sat and begged? Some
 said, This is he : others *said*, He is like him : *but* he said, I am *he*.
 10 Therefore said they unto him, How were thine eyes opened?
 11 He answered and said, A man that is called Jesus, made clay, and
 anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to the pool of Siloam,
 12 and wash : and I went and washed, and I received sight. Then
 said they unto him, Where is he? He said, I know not.

13 They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blind.
 14 And it was the sabbath day when Jesus made the clay, and opened
 15 his eyes. Then again the Pharisees also asked him how he had
 received his sight. He said unto them, He put clay upon mine
 16 eyes, and I washed, and do see. Therefore said some of the
 Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the sab-
 bath-day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner do such
 17 miracles? And there was a division among them. They say unto
 the blind man again, What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened
 thine eyes? He said, He is a prophet.

18 But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been
 blind, and received his sight, until they called the parents of him
 19 that had received his sight. And they asked them, saying, Is this
 your son, who ye say was born blind? how then doth he now see?
 20 His parents answered them and said, We know that this is our
 21 son, and that he was born blind : but by what means he now
 seeth, we know not ; or who hath opened his eyes, we know not :
 22 he is of age ; ask him : he shall speak for himself. These *words*
 spake his parents, because they feared the Jews : for the Jews had
 agreed already, that if any man did confess that he was Christ, he
 23 should be put out of the synagogue. Therefore said his parents,
 He is of age ; ask him,

Section 92.

The Man again examined, cast out, and found by Christ.

The Temple, and the Street.

JOHN 9 : 24-38.

24 THEN again called they the man that was blind, and said unto
 him, Give God the praise : we know that this man is a sinner.

25 He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner *or no*, I know not :
 26 one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see. Then
 said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he
 27 thine eyes? He answered them, I have told you already, and ye
 did not hear : wherefore would ye hear *it* again? will ye also be
 28 his disciples? Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his
 29 disciple ; but we are Moses' disciples. We know that God spake
 unto Moses ; *as for this fellow*, we know not from whence he is.
 30 The man answered and said unto them, Why, herein is a marvel-
 lous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and *yet* he hath
 31 opened mine eyes. Now we know that God heareth not sinners :
 but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him
 32 he heareth. Since the world began was it not heard that any man
 33 opened the eyes of one that was born blind. If this man were not
 34 of God, he could do nothing. They answered and said unto him,
 Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And
 they cast him out.
 35 Jesus heard that they had cast him out ; and when he had found
 him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God?
 36 He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on
 37 him? And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it
 38 is he that talketh with thee. And he said, Lord, I believe. And
 he worshipped him.

Section 93.

The Only Door into the Fold of God.

JOHN 9 : 39-41 ; 10 : 1-10.

39 AND Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world, that
 they which see not might see ; and that they which see might be
 40 made blind. And *some* of the Pharisees which were with him
 41 heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also? Jesus
 said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin : but now
 ye say, We see ; therefore your sin remaineth.
 1 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door
 into the sheepfold but climbeth up some other way, the same is a
 2 thief and a robber. But he that entereth in by the door is the
 3 shepherd of the sheep. To him the porter openeth ; and the sheep
 hear his voice : and he calleth his own sheep by name, and lead-

- 4 eth them out. And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he
goeth before them, and the sheep follow him : for they know his
5 voice. And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from
him : for they know not the voice of strangers.
- 6 This parable spake Jesus unto them : but they understood
7 not what things they were which he spake unto them. Then said
Jesus unto them again, Verily, verily, I say unto you, I am the
8 door of the sheep. All that ever came before me are thieves and
9 robbers : but the sheep did not hear them. I am the door : by
me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out,
10 and find pasture. The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to
kill, and to destroy : I am come that they might have life, and
that they might have it more abundantly.
-

Section 94.

The Good Shepherd.

The Temple.

JOHN 10 : 11-21.

- 11 I AM the good shepherd : the good shepherd giveth his life for
12 the sheep. But he that is an hireling, and not the shepherd,
whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth
the sheep, and fleeth ; and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth
13 the sheep. The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and
14 careth not for the sheep. I am the good shepherd, and know my
15 sheep, and am known of mine. As the Father knoweth me, even
16 so know I the Father : and I lay down my life for the sheep. And
other sheep I have, which are not of this fold : them also I must
bring, and they shall hear my voice ; and there shall be one fold,
17 and one shepherd. Therefore doth my Father love me, because I
18 lay down my life, that I may take it again. No man taketh it from
me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and
I have power to take it again. This commandment have I re-
ceived of my Father.
- 19 There was a division therefore again among the Jews for these
20 sayings. And many of them said, He hath a devil, and is mad ;
21 why hear ye him ? Others said, These are not the words of him
that hath a devil. Can a devil open the eyes of the blind ?

Section 95.

At the Feast of Dedication. Charged with Blasphemy.

The Temple. Perea.

—JOHN 10 : 22-42.

22 AND it was at Jerusalem the feast of the dedication, and it was
23 winter. And Jesus walked in the temple in Solomon's porch.
24 Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him, How
long dost thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us
25 plainly. Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not :
the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me.
26 But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto
27 you. My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow
28 me ; and I give unto them eternal life ; and they shall never
29 perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand. My
Father which gave *them* me, is greater than all ; and no man is
30 able to pluck *them* out of my Father's hand. I and *my* Father are
one.

31, 32 Then the Jews took up stones again to stone him. Jesus
answered them, Many good works have I showed you from my
33 Father ; for which of those works do ye stone me? The Jews
answered him, saying, For a good work we stone thee not ; but
for blasphemy, and because that thou, being a man, makest thy-
34 self God. Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I
35 said, Ye are gods? If he called them gods, unto whom the word
36 of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken ; say ye of him
whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou
37 blasphemest ; because I said, I am the Son of God? If I do not
38 the works of my Father, believe me not. But if I do, though ye
believe not me, believe the works : that ye may know and believe
that the Father *is* in me, and I in him.

39 Therefore they sought again to take him ; but he escaped out
40 of their hand, and went away again beyond Jordan, into the place
41 where John at first baptized ; and there he abode. And many re-
sorted unto him, and said, John did no miracle ; but all things
42 that John spake of this man were true. And many believed on
him there.

Section 96.

Informed of Lazarus's Sickness. Delays Four Days.

Perea.

JOHN 11 : 1-16.

1 Now a certain *man* was sick, *named* Lazarus, of Bethany, the
 2 town of Mary and her sister Martha. (It was *that* Mary which
 3 anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her
 4 hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick.) Therefore his sisters sent
 5 unto him, saying, Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick. When
 6 Jesus heard *that*, he said, This sickness is not unto death, but for
 7 the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby.
 8 Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus. When
 9 he had heard therefore that he was sick, he abode two days still in
 10 the same place where he was. Then after that saith he to *his* dis-
 11 ciples, Let us go into Judea again. *His* disciples say unto him,
 12 Master, the Jews of late sought to stone thee ; and goest thou
 13 thither again ? Jesus answered, Are there not twelve hours in the
 14 day ? If any man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he
 15 seeth the light of this world. But if a man walk in the night, he
 16 stumbleth, because there is no light in him. These things said
 he : and after that he saith unto them, Our friend Lazarus sleep-
 eth ; but I go that I may awake him out of sleep. Then said his
 disciples, Lord, if he sleep, he shall do well. Howbeit Jesus
 spake of his death : but they thought that he had spoken of tak-
 ing of rest in sleep. Then said Jesus unto them plainly, Lazarus
 is dead. And I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, to
 the intent ye may believe ; nevertheless, let us go unto him. Then
 said Thomas, which is called Didymus, unto his fellow-disciples,
 Let us also go, that we may die with him.

Section 97.

"I am the Resurrection and the Life."

JOHN 11 : 17-31.

17 THEN when Jesus came, he found that he had *lain* in the grave
 18 four days already. (Now Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem,

19 about fifteen furlongs off :) And many of the Jews came to Martha
 and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother.
 20 Then Martha, as soon as she heard that Jesus was coming, went
 21 and met him : but Mary sat *still* in the house. Then said Martha
 unto Jesus, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not
 22 died. But I know that even now, whatsoever thou wilt ask of
 23 God, God will give *it* thee. Jesus saith unto her, Thy brother
 24 shall rise again. Martha saith unto him, I know that he shall rise
 25 again in the resurrection at the last day. Jesus saith unto her, I
 am the resurrection, and the life : he that believeth in me, though
 26 he were dead, yet shall he live : and whosoever liveth, and be-
 27 lieveth in me, shall never die. Believest thou this? She saith
 unto him, Yea, Lord : I believe that thou art the Christ, the Son
 of God, which should come into the world.
 28 And when she had so said, she went her way, and called Mary
 her sister secretly, saying, The Master is come, and calleth for
 29 thee. As soon as she heard *that*, she arose quickly, and came unto
 30 him. Now Jesus was not yet come into the town, but was in that
 31 place where Martha met him. The Jews then which were with
 her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary that
 she arose up hastily, and went out, followed her, saying, She
 goeth unto the grave to weep there.

Section 98.

Raises Lazarus from the Grave.

Bethany.

JOHN 11 : 32-46.

32 THEN when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him, she
 fell down at his feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been
 33 here, my brother had not died. When Jesus therefore saw her
 weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he
 34, groaned in the spirit, and was troubled, and said, Where have ye
 35 laid him? They said unto him, Lord, come and see. Jesus wept.
 36, 37 Then said the Jews, Behold how he loved him ! And some
 of them said, Could not this man, which opened the eyes of the
 38 blind, have caused that even this man should not have died? Je-

39 sus therefore again groaning in himself, cometh to the grave. It was a cave, and a stone lay upon it. Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh : for he hath been *dead* four 40 days. Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that if thou 41 wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God? Then they took away the stone *from the place* where the dead was laid.

And Jesus lifted up *his* eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee 42 that thou hast heard me : and I knew that thou hearest me always : but because of the people which stand by, I said *it*, that they may 43 believe that thou hast sent me. And when he thus had spoken, 44 he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with grave-clothes : and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go.

45 Then many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the 46 things which Jesus did, believed on him. But some of them went their ways to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done.

Section 99.

The Council conspire against Jesus.

Jerusalem.

JOHN 11 : 47-54.

47 THEN gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a council, and 48 said, What do we? for this man doeth many miracles. If we let him thus alone, all *men* will believe on him : and the Romans shall 49 come, and take away both our place and nation. And one of them, *named* Caiaphas, being the high-priest that same year, said unto 50 them, Ye know nothing at all, nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole 51 nation perish not. And this spake he not of himself : but being high-priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for that 52 nation ; and not for that nation only, but that also he should gather together in one the children of God that were scattered abroad.

53 Then from that day forth they took counsel together for to put

54 him to death. Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews ; but went thence unto a country near to the wilderness, into a city called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.

Section 100.

An Infirm Woman healed.

Perea.

MATTHEW 19 : 1, 2. MARK 10 : 1. LUKE 13 : 10-21.

- Mk. 1 AND he arose from thence, and cometh into the coasts of Judea, by the farther side of Jordan : and the people resort unto him again ; and great multitudes followed him ; and as he was wont, he taught them again, and healed them there.
- L. 10 And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath.
- 11 And behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift
- 12 up *herself*. And when Jesus saw her, he called *her to him*, and said
- 13 unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity. And he laid *his* hands on her : and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God.
- 14 And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath-day, and said unto the people, There are six days in which men ought to work : in them
- 15 therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath-day. The Lord then answered him, and said, *Thou* hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or *his* ass from the stall,
- 16 and lead *him* away to watering ? And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo, these
- 17 eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath-day ? And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were asbamed : and all the people rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.
- 18 Then said he, Unto what is the kingdom of God like ; and
- 19 whereunto shall I resemble it ? It is like a grain of mustard-seed, which a man took and cast into his garden, and it grew, and waxed a great tree ; and the fowls of the air lodged in the branches

20 of it. And again he said, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdom of
 21 God? It is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three
 measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

Section 101.

Entrance into the Kingdom. Message to Herod.

Perea.

LUKE 13 : 22-35.

22 AND he went through the cities and villages, teaching, and
 23 journeying toward Jerusalem. Then said one unto him, Lord,
 24 are there few that be saved? And he said unto them, Strive to
 enter in at the strait gate : for many, I say unto you, will seek to
 25 enter in, and shall not be able. When once the master of the
 house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand
 without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto
 us ; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence
 26 ye are : Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in
 27 thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets. But he shall
 say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are ; depart from me,
 28 all ye workers of iniquity. There shall be weeping and gnashing
 of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all
 the prophets, in the kingdom of God and you *yourselves* thrust out.
 29 And they shall come from the east, and *from* the west, and from
 the north, and *from* the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom
 30 of God. And, behold, there are last, which shall be first ; and
 there are first, which shall be last.

31 The same day there came certain of the Pharisees, saying unto
 him, Get thee out, and depart hence ; for Herod will kill thee.
 32 And he said unto them, Go ye and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out
 devils, and I do cures to-day and to-morrow, and the third *day* I
 33 shall be perfected. Nevertheless, I must walk to-day, and to-
 morrow, and the *day* following : for it cannot be that a prophet
 34 perish out of Jerusalem. O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest
 the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee ; how often
 would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen *doth ga'ther*
 35 her brood under *her* wings, and ye would not ! Behold, your house

is left unto you desolate. And verily, I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until *the time* come when ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

Section 102.

Dropsy healed on the Sabbath. Humility.

Perea.

LUKE 14 : 1-14.

- 1 AND it came to pass, as he went into the house of one of the chief Pharisees to eat bread on the sabbath-day, that they watched
- 2 him. And behold, there was a certain man before him which had
- 3 the dropsy. And Jesus answering, spake unto the lawyers and
- 4 Pharisees, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath-day? And they held their peace. And he took *him*, and healed him, and
- 5 let him go : and answered them, saying, Which of you shall have an ass or an ox fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him
- 6 out on the sabbath-day? And they could not answer him again to these things.
- 7 And he put forth a parable to those which were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief rooms ; saying unto them,
- 8 When thou art bidden of any *man* to a wedding, sit not down in the highest room, lest a more honourable man than thou be bid-
- 9 den of him ; and he that bade thee and him come and say to thee, Give this man place ; and thou begin with shame to take the low-
- 10 est room. But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest room ; that when he that bade thee cometh, he may say unto thee, Friend, go up higher : then shalt thou have worship in
- 11 the presence of them that sit at meat with thee. For whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased, and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.
- 12 Then said he also to him that bade him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor *thy* rich neighbours ; lest they also bid thee
- 13 again, and a recompense be made thee. But when thou makest a
- 14 feast, call the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind : and thou shalt be blessed : for they cannot recompense thee : for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just.

Section 103.

The Great Supper. Counting the Cost.

LUKE 14 : 15-35.

- 15 AND when one of them that sat at meat with him heard these things, he said unto him, Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God.
- 16 Then said he unto him, A certain man made a great supper, and bade many : and sent his servant at supper-time to say to them that were bidden, Come, for all things are now ready. And they all with one *consent* began to make excuse. The first said unto him, I have bought a piece of ground, and I must needs go and see it : I pray thee have me excused. And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them : I pray thee have me excused. And another said, I have married a wife : and therefore I cannot come. So that servant came, and showed his lord these things. Then the master of the house being angry, said to his servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind. And the servant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is room. And the lord said unto the servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel *them* to come in, that my house may be filled. For I say unto you, That none of those men which were bidden, shall taste of my supper.
- 25 And there went great multitudes with him : and he turned, and said unto them, If any *man* come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.
- 28 For which of you intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he hath *sufficient* to finish *it* ? Lest haply after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish *it*, all that behold *it* begin to mock him, saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish.
- 31 Or what king, going to make war against another king, sitteth not down first, and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand ?

- 32 Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassador, and desireth conditions of peace. So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.
- 34 Salt is good : but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be seasoned? It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dunghill ; *but* men cast it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

Section 104

The Lost Sheep and the Lost Coin.

LUKE 15: 1-10.

- 1 THEN drew near unto him all the publicans and sinners for to hear him. And the Pharisees and scribes murmured, saying, This man receiveth sinners, and eateth with them.
- 3, 4 And he spake this parable unto them, saying, What man of you having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it? And when he hath found *it*, he layeth *it* on his shoulders, rejoicing. And when he cometh home, he calleth together *his* friends and neighbours, saying unto them,
- 7 Rejoice with me ; for I have found my sheep which was lost. I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons which need no repentance.
- 8 Either what woman having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she find *it*? And when she hath found *it*, she calleth *her* friends and *her* neighbours together, saying, Rejoice with me ; for I have found the piece which I had lost. Likewise, I say unto you, There is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.

Section 105.

The Lost Son.

LUKE 15 : 11-32.

11, 12 AND he said, A certain man had two sons : and the younger
of them said to *his* father, Father, give me the portion of goods
13 that falleth to me. And he divided unto them *his* living. And not
many days after, the younger son gathered all together, and took
his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with
14 riotous living. And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty fam-
15 ine in that land ; and he began to be in want. And he went and
joined himself to a citizen of that country ; and he sent him into
16 his fields to feed swine. And he would fain have filled his belly
with the husks that the swine did eat ; and no man gave unto him.
17 And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants
of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with
18 hunger ! I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto
19 him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee,
and am no more worthy to be called thy son : make me as
20 one of thy hired servants. And he arose, and came to his father.
But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had
21 compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. And
the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and
22 in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son. But
the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put
23 it on him ; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on *his* feet : and
bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it ; and let us eat, and be
24 merry : for this my son was dead, and is alive again ; he was lost
and is found. And they began to be merry.

25 Now his elder son was in the field : and as he came and drew
26 nigh to the house, he heard music and dancing. And he called
27 one of the servants, and asked what these things meant. And he
said unto him, Thy brother is come ; and thy father hath killed
28 the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound. And
he was angry, and would not go in ; therefore came his father out,
29 and entreated him. And he answering, said to *his* father, Lo,
these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any
time thy commandment ; yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I
30 might make merry with my friends : but as soon as this thy son

was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast
 31 killed for him the fatted calf. And he said unto him, Son, thou
 32 art ever with me ; and all that I have is thine. It was meet that
 we should make merry, and be glad : for this thy brother was dead,
 and is alive again : and was lost, and is found.

Section 106.

The Unjust Steward.

LUKE 16 : 1-18.

- 1 AND he said also unto his disciples, There was a certain rich man
 which had a steward ; and the same was accused unto him that
 2 he had wasted his goods. And he called him, and said unto him,
 How is it that I hear this of thee ? give an account of thy steward-
 3 ship : for thou mayest be no longer steward. Then the steward
 said within himself, What shall I do ? for my lord taketh away
 4 from me the stewardship : I cannot dig ; to beg I am ashamed. I
 am resolved what to do, that when I am put out of the steward-
 5 ship, they may receive me into their houses. So he called every
 one of his lord's debtors *unto him*, and said unto the first, How
 6 much owest thou unto my lord ? And he said, An hundred meas-
 ures of oil. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and sit down
 7 quickly, and write fifty. Then said he to another, And how much
 owest thou ? And he said, An hundred measures of wheat. And
 8 he said unto him, Take thy bill, and write fourscore. And the lord
 commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely : for
 the children of this world are in their generation wiser than the
 children of light.
- 9 And I say unto you, Make to yourselves friends of the mammon
 of unrighteousness ; that when ye fail, they may receive you into
 10 everlasting habitations. He that is faithful in that which is least,
 is faithful also in much ; and he that is unjust in the least, is un-
 11 just also in much. If therefore ye have not been faithful in the
 unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true
 12 riches ? And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another
 13 man's, who shall give you that which is your own ? No servant
 can serve two masters : for either he will hate the one, and love

the other ; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other.
Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

14 And the Pharisees also, who were covetous, heard all these
15 things, and they derided him. And he said unto them, Ye are
they which justify yourselves before men ; but God knoweth your
hearts : for that which is highly esteemed among men is abom-
16 ination in the sight of God. The law and the prophets *were* until
John : since that time the kingdom of God is preached, and every
17 man presseth into it. And it is easier for heaven and earth to
18 pass, than one tittle of the law to fail. Whosoever putteth away
his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery ; and whoso-
ever marrieth her that is put away from *her* husband, committeth
adultery.

Section 107.

The Rich Man and Lazarus.

LUKE 16 : 19-31.

19 THERE was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and
20 fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day : and there was a cer-
tain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of
21 sores, and desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the
rich man's table : moreover, the dogs came and licked his sores.
22 And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the
angels into Abraham's bosom : the rich man also died, and was
23 buried : and in hell he lifted up his eyes, being in torments, and
24 seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. And he cried,
and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus,
that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue :
25 for I am tormented in this flame. But Abraham said, Son, re-
member that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and
likewise Lazarus evil things : but now he is comforted, and thou
26 art tormented. And besides all this, between us and you there is
a great gulf fixed : so that they which would pass from hence to
you, cannot ; neither can they pass to us, that *would come* from
27 thence. Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou
28 wouldest send him to my father's house : for I have five breth-

ren ; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this
 29 place of torment. Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and
 30 the prophets ; let them hear them. And he said, Nay, father
 Abraham : but if one went unto them from the dead, they will re-
 31 pent. And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the
 prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from
 the dead.

Section 108.

A Forgiving, Believing, and Serving Spirit.

Perea.

LUKE 17 : 1-10.

1 THEN said he unto the disciples, It is impossible but that of-
 fences will come : but woe *unto him* through whom they come !
 2 It were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his
 neck, and he cast into the sea, than that he should offend one of
 3 these little ones. Take heed to yourselves : If thy brother tres-
 pass against thee, rebuke him ; and if he repent, forgive him.
 4 And if he trespass against thee seven times in a day, and seven
 times in a day turn again to thee, saying, I repent ; thou shalt
 5 forgive him. And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our
 6 faith. And the Lord said, If ye had faith as a grain of mustard-
 seed, ye might say unto this sycamine tree, Be thou plucked up by
 the root, and be thou planted in the sea ; and it should obey you.
 7 But which of you having a servant plowing, or feeding cattle,
 will say unto him by and by, when he is come from the field, Go
 8 and sit down to meat ? And will not rather say unto him, Make
 ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thyself, and serve me, till I
 have eaten and drunken ; and afterward thou shalt eat and drink ?
 9 Doth he thank that servant, because he did the things that were
 10 commanded him ? I trow not. So likewise ye, when ye shall
 have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We
 are unprofitable servants : we have done that which was our duty
 to do.

Section 109.

Destruction of the Jewish State.

Perea.

LUKE 17 : 20-37.

- 20 AND when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation. Neither shall they say, Lo here ! or, Lo there ! for behold, the kingdom of God is within you.
- 22 And he said unto the disciples, The days will come, when ye shall desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and ye shall not see it. And they shall say to you, See here ! or, See there !
- 24 Go not after *them*, nor follow *them*. For as the lightning that lighteth out of the one *part* under heaven, shineth unto the other *part* under heaven ; so shall also the Son of man be in his day. But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation. And as it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of Man. They did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, and the flood came, and destroyed them all. Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot ; they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded ; but the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed *them* all. Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed. In that day, he which shall be upon the housetop, and his stuff in the house, let him not come down to take it away : and he that is in the field, let him likewise
- 32, 33 not return back. Remember Lot's wife. Whosoever shall seek to save his life, shall lose it ; and whosoever shall lose his life, shall preserve it. I tell you, in that night there shall be two *men* in one bed ; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left. Two *women* shall be grinding together ; the one shall be taken, and the other left. Two *men* shall be in the field ; the one shall be taken, and the other left. And they answered and said unto him, Where, Lord ? And he said unto them, Wheresoever the body *is*, thither will the eagles be gathered together.

Section 110.

The Importunate Widow. The Pharisee and Publican.

Perea.

LUKE 18 : 1-14.

1 AND he spake a parable unto them *to this end*, that men ought
2 always to pray, and not to faint ; saying, There was in a city a
3 judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man. And there
4 was a widow in that city ; and she came unto him, saying, Avenge
5 me of mine adversary. And he would not for a while : but after-
6 ward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard
7 man ; yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest
8 by her continual coming she weary me. And the Lord said, Hear
9 what the unjust judge saith. And shall not God avenge his own
10 elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with
11 them ? I tell you that he will avenge them speedily. Neverthe-
12 less, when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth ?
13 And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in them-
14 selves that they were righteous, and despised others : Two men
went up into the temple to pray ; the one a Pharisee, and the
other a publican. The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with him-
self, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men *are*, extor-
tioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. I fast twice
in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess. And the publican,
standing afar off, would not lift up so much as *his* eyes unto
heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to
me a sinner. I tell you, this man went down to his house justi-
fied *rather* than the other : for every one that exalteth himself shall
be abased ; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

Section 111.

Divorce and Marriage. Little Children blessed.

Perea.

MATTHEW 19 : 3-15. MARK 10 : 2-16. LUKE 18 : 15-17.

- M. 3 THE Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause? **Mk.** 3 And he answered and said unto them, What did 4 Moses command you? And they said, Moses suffered to write a 5 bill of divorcement, and to put *her* away. And Jesus answered and said unto them, For the hardness of your heart, he wrote you this precept. **M.** 4 And he said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made *them* at the beginning of the creation made 5 them male and female, and said, For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife, and they twain 6 shall be one flesh? Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put 7 asunder. They say unto him, Why did Moses then command to 8 give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away? He saith unto them, Moses because of the hardness of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives ; but from the beginning it was not 9 so. And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except *it be* for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery : and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery.
- Mk.** 10 And in the house his disciples asked him again of the same 11 *matter*. And he saith unto them, Whosoever shall put away his 12 wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her. And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery. **M.** 10 His disciples say unto him, If the case of the man be so with *his* wife, it is not good to 11 marry. But he said unto them, All *men* cannot receive this saying, save *they* to whom it is given. For there are some eunuchs which were so born from *their* mother's womb : and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men : and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive *it*, let him receive *it*.
- 13 Then were there brought unto him little children, that he should put *his* hands on them, and pray ; but when *his* disciples saw *it*,

they rebuked those that brought *them*. **Mk.** 14 But when Jesus saw *it*, he was much displeased, and called them *unto him*, and said, Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not :
 15 for of such is the kingdom of heaven. Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child,
 16 he shall in no wise enter therein. And he took them up in his arms, put *his* hands upon them, and blessed them. And *he* departed thence.

Section 112.

The Rich Young Ruler. Peter's Selfish Question.

Perea.

MATTHEW 19 : 16-30. MARK 10 : 17-31. LUKE 18 : 18-30.

Mk. 17 AND when he was gone forth into the way, behold, a certain ruler came running, and kneeled to him ; and asked him, saying, Good Master, what good thing shall I do that I may inherit eternal life? **M.** 17 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? *there is none good but one, that is, God.* But if
 18 thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments. He saith unto him, Which? Jesus said, Thou knowest the commandments : Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Defraud not,
 19 Honour thy father and thy mother, and, Thou shalt love thy
 20 neighbour as thyself. The young man answered and said unto him, Master, all these things have I kept from my youth up :
 21 what lack I yet? Now when Jesus heard these things, beholding him *he* loved him, and said unto him, Yet lackest thou one thing ; if thou wilt be perfect, go thy way, sell all that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven : and
 22 come, take up the cross and follow me. But when the young man heard that saying he was very sorrowful, and went away grieved : for he was very rich, *and* had great possessions.
 23 And when Jesus saw that he was very sorrowful, he looked round about, and saith unto his disciples, Verily I say unto you, That a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdom of heaven.
Mk. 24 And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Je-

- sus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of God !
- M.** 24 And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the
- 25 kingdom of God. When his disciples heard *it*, they were exceedingly amazed, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved ?
- 26 But Jesus looking upon them saith, With men this is impossible but not with God : for with God all things are possible.
- 27 Then answered Peter, and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee ; what shall we have therefore ? And
- 28 Jesus answered and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me in the regeneration, when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon
- 29 twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. And verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake and the gospel's, *or* for the kingdom of God's sake, who shall not receive an hundred-fold now in this present time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions ; and in the world to come
- 30 shall inherit everlasting life. But many *that are* first shall be last ; and the last *shall be* first.

Section 113.

The Laborers in the Vineyard.

MATTHEW 20 : 1-16.

- 1 For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man *that is* an householder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers
- 2 into his vineyard. And when he had agreed with the labourers
- 3 for a penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard. And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the
- 4 marketplace, and said unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard ; and whatsoever is right, I will give you. And they went their
- 5 way. Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did
- 6 likewise. And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all

7 the day idle? They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard ; and whatsoever
 8 is right, *that* shall ye receive. So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and
 9 give them *their* hire, beginning from the last unto the first. And when they came that *were hired* about the eleventh hour, they re-
 10 ceived every man a penny. But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more ; and they likewise re-
 11 ceived every man a penny. And when they had received *it*, they murmured against the goodman of the house, saying, These last
 12 have wrought *but* one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto
 13 us, which have borne the burden and heat of the day. But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong : didst
 14 not thou agree with me for a penny? Take *that* thine *is*, and go
 15 thy way : I will give unto this last, even as unto thee. Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? Is thine eye evil
 16 because I am good? So the last shall be first, and the first last : for many be called, but few chosen.

Section 114.

The Last Journey. Serving greater than Ruling.

MATTHEW 20 : 17-28. MARK 10 : 32-45. LUKE 18 : 31-34.

Mk. 32 AND they were in the way going up to Jerusalem, and Jesus went before them : and they were amazed, and as they followed they were afraid. And he took the twelve disciples apart in the way, and began to tell them what things should happen unto him ;
 33 and said unto them, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem ; and all things that are written by the prophets concerning the Son of man shall be accomplished. For he shall be betrayed, *and* delivered unto the chief priests, and unto the scribes ; and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles, to mock, and to scourge, and to crucify *him*. **L.** 32 And he shall be
 33 mocked, and spitefully entreated, and spitted on : and they shall scourge him, and put him to death : and the third day he shall
 34 rise again. And they understood none of these things : and this

saying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken.

M. 20 Then came to him the mother of Zebedee's children, with her sons, worshipping *him*, and desiring a certain thing of him.

Mk. 35 And James and John come unto him, saying, Master, we would that thou shouldest do for us whatsoever we shall desire.

36 And he said unto them, What would ye that I should do for you?

57 They said unto him, Grant unto us that we may sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand, in thy glory. **M.** 21

And the mother saith unto him, Grant that these my two sons may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left, in

22 thy kingdom. But Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall

drink of, and to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? And they said unto him, We are able. **Mk.** 39 And Je-

sus said unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of the cup that I drink of; and with the baptism that I am baptized withal shall ye be

40 baptized: but to sit on my right hand and on my left hand, is not mine to give; but *it shall be given to them* for whom it is prepared of my Father.

41 And when the ten heard *it*, they began to be much displeased with James and John, and were moved with indignation against

the two brethren. **M.** 25 But Jesus called them *unto him*, and said, Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over

them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them. **Mk.** 43 But so shall it not be among you: but whosoever will be great

44 among you, shall be your minister: and whosoever among you

45 will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all. For even the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

Section 115.

Bartimeus. Zaccheus.

Jericho.

MATTHEW 20 : 29-34. MARK 10 : 46-52. LUKE 18 : 35-43 ; 19 : 1-10.

L. 35 AND they came to Jericho; and as he went out of Jericho with his disciples, a great multitude followed him. And behold, a cer-

tain blind man, Bartimeus, the son of Timeus, sat by the highway
 36 side begging. And hearing the multitude pass by he asked what
 37 it meant. And they told him, that Jesus of Nazareth passeth by.
 38 And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry
 39 out, and say, Jesus, *thou* Son of David, have mercy on me. And
 the multitude which went before rebuked him and charged him
 that he should hold his peace : but he cried so much the more a
 40 great deal, O Lord, *thou* Son of David, have mercy on me. And
 Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be brought unto him.
Mk. 49 And they call the blind man, saying unto *him*, Be of
 50 good comfort, rise, he calleth thee. And *he*, casting away his
 garment, rose and came to Jesus. **L.** 40 And when he was come
 41 near, Jesus asked him, saying, What wilt thou that I shall do unto
 thee? And the blind man said unto him, Lord, that I may receive
 42 my sight. And Jesus said unto him, Receive thy sight : go thy
 43 way : thy faith hath made thee whole *and* saved thee. And im-
 mediately he received his sight, and followed him, glorifying God :
 and all the people, when they saw *it*, gave praise unto God.

L. 1, 2 And Jesus entered and passed through Jericho. And behold,
there was a man named Zaccheus, which was the chief among the
 3 publicans, and he was rich. And he sought to see Jesus who he
 was : and could not for the press, because he was little of stature.
 4 And he ran before, and climbed up into a sycamore tree to see
 5 him ; for he was to pass that *way*. And when Jesus came to the
 place, he looked up and saw him, and said unto him, Zaccheus,
 make haste and come down ; for to-day I must abide at thy house.
 6 And he made haste, and came down, and received him joyfully.
 7 And when they saw *it*, they all murmured, saying, That he was
 8 gone to be a guest with a man that is a sinner. And Zaccheus
 stood, and said unto the Lord, Behold, Lord, the half of my goods
 I give to the poor ; and if I have taken any thing from any man
 9 by false accusation, I restore *him* fourfold. And Jesus said unto
 him, This day is salvation come to this house, forasmuch as he
 10 also is a son of Abraham. For the Son of man is come to seek
 and to save that which was lost.

Section 116.

The Pounds.

Jericho.

LUKE 19 : 11-28.

- 11 AND as they heard these things, he added and spake a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they thought that
12 the kingdom of God should immediately appear. He said therefore, A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for
13 himself a kingdom, and to return. And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, Occupy till I come. But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not have this *man* to reign over us.
14 And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received the kingdom, then he commanded these servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know how
15 much every man had gained by trading. Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds. And he said unto him, Well, thou good servant : because thou hast been faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities. And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds.
16 And he said likewise to him, Be thou also over five cities.
17 And another came, saying, Lord, behold, *here is* thy pound, which I have kept laid up in a napkin : for I feared thee, because thou art an austere man : thou takest up that thou layedst not down,
18 and reapest that thou didst not sow. And he saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, *thou* wicked servant. Thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking up that I laid not down,
19 and reaping that I did not sow : wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required
20 mine own with usury ? And he said unto them that stood by, Take from him the pound, and give it to him that hath ten pounds. (And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.)
21 For I say unto you, That unto every one which hath shall be given ; and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken
22 away from him. But those mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay *them* before me.
23 And when he had thus spoken, he went before, ascending up to Jerusalem.

Section 117.

The Anointing by Mary.

Bethany.

MATTHEW 26 : 6-13. MARK 14 : 3-9. JOHN 11 : 55-57 ; 12 : 1-11.

J. 55 AND the Jews' passover was nigh at hand : and many went
out of the country up to Jerusalem before the passover, to purify
56 themselves. Then sought they for Jesus, and spake among
themselves, as they stood in the temple, What think ye, that he
57 will not come up to the feast? Now both the chief priests and
the Pharisees had given a commandment, that, if any man knew
where he were, he should shew *it*, that they might take him.

1 Then Jesus six days before the passover came to Bethany,
where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom he raised from
2 the dead. There they made him a supper in the house of Simon
the leper, and Martha served : but Lazarus was one of them that
3 sat at the table with him. Then, as he sat at meat, came Mary
unto him, having an alabaster box with a pound of ointment of
spikenard, very precious ; and she brake the box, and poured it
on his head ; and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet
with her hair ; and the house was filled with the odour of the
4 ointment. Then saith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Si-
5 mon's *son*, which should betray him, Why was not this ointment
6 sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor? This he
said, not that he cared for the poor ; but because he was a thief,
and had the bag, and bare what was put therein. **Mk.** 4 And
there were some disciples that had indignation within themselves,
5 and said, To what purpose *is* this waste? for this ointment might
have been sold for much, and given to the poor ; and they mur-
6 mured against her. When Jesus understood *it*, he said unto them,
Let her alone : why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought
7 a good work upon me. For ye have the poor with you always,
and whensoever ye will ye may do them good : but me ye have
8 not always. She hath done what she could : for in that she hath
kept this ointment and poured it on my body, she is come afore-
9 hand to anoint it for my burial. Verily, I say unto you, Where-
soever this gospel shall be preached throughout the whole world,
this also that this woman hath done shall be spoken of for a
memorial of her.

- J. 9 Much people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there :
 and they came, not for Jesus' sake only, but that they might see
 10 Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead. But the chief
 11 priests consulted that they might put Lazarus also to death ; be-
 cause that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and be-
 lieved on Jesus.

Section 118.

Public Entry into Jerusalem.

MATTHEW 21 : 1-9. MARK 11 : 1-10. LUKE 19 : 29-40. JOHN 12 :
 12-19.

- J. 12 On the next day much people that were come to the feast,
 13 when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem, took
 branches of palm trees, and went forth to meet him.
- L. 29 And it came to pass on the next day, when they drew nigh
 unto Jerusalem, when he was come to Bethphage and Bethany, at
 the mount called *the mount* of Olives, Jesus sendeth forth two of
 30 his disciples, saying unto them, Go ye your way into the village
 over against you ; in the which at your entering straightway ye
 shall find an ass tied, and a colt tied with her whereon yet never
 man sat : loose *them*, and bring *them* hither unto me. **Mk.** 3 And
 if any man say unto you, Why do ye this ? Thus say ye unto him,
 The Lord hath need of them ; and straightway he will send them
 4 hither. And the disciples that were sent went their way, and did
 as Jesus commanded them, and found the colt, even as he had
 said unto them, tied by the door without, in a place where two
 ways met : and they loose him. **L.** 33 And as they were loosing
 the colt, the owners thereof that stood there said unto them, Why
 34 loose ye the colt ? And they said unto them, even as Jesus had
 commanded, The Lord hath need of him ; and they let them go.
 35 And they brought the ass and the colt to Jesus, and they cast
 their garments upon the colt ; and they set Jesus thereon.
- M. 4 All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken
 5 by the prophet, saying, as it is written, Tell ye the daughter of
 Zion, Fear not, behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek, and
 sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass. **J.** 16 These
 things understood not his disciples at the first : but when Jesus

was glorified, then remembered they that these things were written of him, and *that* they had done these things unto him. The people therefore that was with him when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead, bare record. For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this miracle.

L. 36 And as he went, a very great multitude spread their garments in the way ; and others cut down branches off the trees, and strewed *them* in the way. And when he was come nigh, even now at the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice and praise God with a loud voice, for all the mighty works that they had seen. And the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the Son of David ! Blessed is he, the King of Israel, that cometh in the name of the Lord : Blessed be the kingdom of our father David, that cometh in the name of the Lord. Hosanna in the highest ! Peace in heaven, and glory in the highest !

39 And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude said unto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples. And he answered and said unto them, I tell you that if these should hold their peace, the stones would immediately cry out. J. 19 The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing ? Behold, the world is gone after him.

Section 119.

Weeps over the City. The Fig-tree cursed.

Sunday and Monday.

MATTHEW 21 : 10, 11, 14-19. MARK 11 : 11-14. LUKE 19 : 41-44.

L. 41 AND when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it, saying, If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things *which belong* unto thy peace ! but now they are hid from thine eyes. For the days shall come upon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side, and shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee ; and they shall

not leave in thee one stone upon another ; because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

M. 10 And Jesus entered into Jerusalem, and into the temple. And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was moved, saying, Who is this ? And the multitude said, This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee. And the blind and the lame came to him in the temple ; and he healed them. And when the chief priests and scribes saw the wonderful things that he did, and the children crying in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the Son of David, they were sore displeased, and said unto him, Hearest thou what these say ? And Jesus saith unto them, Yea ; have ye never read, Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise ?

17 And when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the eventide was come, he left them and went out of the city into Bethany with the twelve : and he lodged there.

Mk. 12 Now on the morrow, in the morning as he returned from Bethany into the city, he was hungry. And seeing a fig-tree afar off in the way, having leaves, he came to it, if haply he might find anything thereon : and when he came to it, he found nothing thereon but leaves only ; for the time of figs was not *yet*. And Jesus answered and said unto it, Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward : no man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever. And his disciples heard it. And presently the fig-tree withered away.

Section 120.

Cleansing of the Temple. Lesson of the Withered Tree.

Monday and Tuesday.

MATTHEW 21 : 12, 13, 20-22. MARK 11 : 15-26. LUKE 19 : 45-48 ;
21 : 37, 38.

Mk. 15 AND they come to Jerusalem. And Jesus went into the temple of God and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money changers, and the seats of them that sold doves ; and would not suffer that any man should carry *any* vessel through the temple. And he taught, saying unto them, Is it not written, My house shall be

- called, of all nations, the house of prayer? but ye have made it a
 18 den of thieves. And he taught daily in the temple. But the chief
 priests, and the scribes, and the chief of the people heard, and
 sought how they might destroy him; and could not find what
 they might do: for they feared him, because all the people were
 very attentive to hear him, and were astonished at his doctrine.
 19 And when even was come, he went out of the city.
 L. 37 And in the day-time he was teaching in the temple; and at
 night he went out, and abode in the mount that is called *the mount*
 38 of Olives. And all the people came early in the morning to him
 in the temple, for to hear him.
 Mk. 20 And in the morning as they passed by, when the disciples
 saw the fig-tree dried up from the roots, they marvelled, saying,
 21 How soon is the fig tree withered away! And Peter, calling to
 remembrance, saith unto him, Master, behold the fig-tree which
 22 thou cursedst is withered away. And Jesus answering, saith unto
 23 them, Have faith in God. For verily I say unto you, That if ye
 have faith, and doubt not, ye shall not only do this *which is done*
 to the fig-tree; but also whosoever shall say unto this mountain,
 Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not
 doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he
 saith shall come to pass; it shall be done, *and* he shall have what-
 24 soever he saith. Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye
 desire when ye pray, believe that ye receive *them*, and ye shall
 have *them*; and all things ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye
 25 shall receive. And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have
 aught against any: that your Father also which *is* in heaven may
 26 forgive you your trespasses. But if ye do not forgive, neither will
 your Father which *is* in heaven forgive your trespasses.

Section 121.

His Authority questioned. The Two Sons.

The Temple. Tuesday.

MATTHEW 21 : 23-32. MARK 11 : 27-33 ; 12 : 1. LUKE 20 : 1-9.

- Mk. 27 AND on one of those days they come again to Jerusalem :
 and when he was come into the temple, it came to pass, as he was

walking, as he taught the people and preached the gospel, there came unto him the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people : **L.** 2 and spake unto him saying, Tell us by what authority doest thou these things ? or who is he that gave thee
 3 this authority ? And Jesus answered and said unto them, I will also ask you one thing, which, if ye tell me, I in like wise will tell
 4 you by what authority I do these things. The baptism of John, 5 whence was it ? from heaven, or of men ? answer me. And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven ;
 6 he will say unto us, Why then believed ye him not ? But if we shall say, Of men, we fear the people : all the people will stone us, for they all be persuaded that John was a prophet indeed.
 7 And they answered and said unto Jesus, We cannot tell whence *it*
 8 *was*. And Jesus answering said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

Mk. 1 And he began to speak unto them *and* to the people by parables. **M.** 28 But what think ye ? A *certain* man had two sons ; and he came to the first, and said, Son, go work to-day in my
 29 vineyard. He answered and said, I will not : but afterward he
 30 repented, and went. And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered and said, I *go*, sir : and went not.
 31 Whether of them twain did the will of *his* father ? They say unto him, The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God
 32 before you. For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not ; but the publicans and the harlots believed him : and ye, when ye had seen *it*, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him.

Section 122.

The Faithless Husbandmen.

The Temple. Tuesday.

MATTHEW 21 : 33-46. MARK 12 : 1-12. LUKE 20 : 9-19.

M. 33 HEAR another parable : There was a certain householder, which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a winepress in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen ;

- and went into a far country for a long time. **Mk.** 2 And at the season, when the time of the fruit drew near, he sent to the husbandmen a servant, that he might receive from the husbandmen
 3 of the fruit of the vineyard. But the husbandmen caught *him*,
 4 and beat him, and sent *him* away empty. And again he sent unto them another servant; and at him they cast stones, and wounded him in the head; and they beat him also, and entreated *him* shamefully, and sent *him* away empty. And again he sent a third;
 5 and they wounded him also, and cast him out. And again he sent another; and him they killed, and many others; beating some and killing some. **L.** 13 Then the lord of the vineyard, having yet one son, his well-beloved, said, What shall I do? I will send my beloved son: it may be they will reverence *him* when they see him. Therefore he sent him also, last of all, unto them. **M.** 38 But when the husbandmen saw the son, they reasoned among themselves, saying, This is the heir; come, let us kill him,
 39 and let us seize on his inheritance, and *it* shall be ours. And they caught *him*, and cast him out of the vineyard, and slew *him*.
 40 When the lord therefore of the vineyard cometh, what will he do unto those husbandmen? **L.** 16 He shall come and miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out *his* vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons. And when they heard *it*, they said, God forbid.
- 17 And Jesus beheld them, and said, Did ye never read in the scriptures this that is written, **M.** 42 The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is
 43 the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes? Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and
 44 given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof. And whosoever shall fall on this stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.
- 45 And when the chief priests and the scribes and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he had spoken against
 46 them; and the same hour they sought to lay hands on him; but they feared the multitude, because they took him for a prophet. And they left him, and went their way.

Section 123.

The Marriage Feast, and the Wedding Garment.

The Temple. Tuesday.

MATTHEW 22 : 1-14.

- 1 AND Jesus answered and spake unto them again by parables,
2 and said, The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king,
3 which made a marriage for his son, and sent forth his servants to
4 call them that were bidden to the wedding : and they would not
5 come. Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them
6 which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner : my oxen
7 and my fatlings *are* killed, and all things *are* ready : come unto
8 the marriage. But they made light of *it*, and went their ways,
9 one to his farm, another to his merchandise. And the remnant
10 took his servants, and entreated *them* spitefully, and slew *them*.
11 But when the king heard *thereof*, he was wroth : and he sent forth
12 his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their
13 city. Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but
14 they which were bidden were not worthy. Go ye therefore into
the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage.
So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered to-
gether all as many as they found, both bad and good : and the
wedding was furnished with guests.
And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a
man which had not on a wedding garment : and he saith unto
him, Friend, how camest thou in hither, not having a wedding
garment? And he was speechless. Then said the king to the
servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast
him into outer darkness : there shall be weeping and gnashing of
teeth. For many *are* called, but few *are* chosen.

Section 124.

Question about the Tribute Money.

The Temple. Tuesday.

MATTHEW 22 : 15-22. MARK 12 : 13-17. LUKE 20 : 20-26.

M. 15 THEN went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might entangle him in *his* talk. L. 20 And they watched *him*, and sent forth spies, certain of their disciples with the Herodians, which should feign themselves just men, that they might catch him in, *and* take hold of, his words ; that so they might deliver him unto the power and authority of the governor. M. 16 And when they were come, they say unto him, Master, we know that thou art true, that thou sayest and teachest rightly ; neither carest thou for any man, for thouregardest not the person of men, but teach-
 17 est the way of God in truth. Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou ? Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Cesar, or not ?
 18 Shall we give, or shall we not give ? But Jesus perceived their wickedness, knowing their craftiness and hypocrisy ; and said
 19 unto them, Why tempt ye me, *ye* hypocrites ? Shew me the tribute money ; bring me a penny, that I may see it. And they
 20 brought unto him a penny. And he saith unto them, Whose is
 21 this image and superscription ? And they answered and said unto him, Cesar's. Then saith he unto them, Render therefore unto Cesar the things which are Cesar's : and unto God the things that
 22 are God's. And they could not take hold of his words before the people : and when they heard, they marvelled at his answer and held their peace, and left him, and went their way.

Section 125.

Question about the Resurrection.

The Temple. Tuesday.

MATTHEW 22 : 23-33. MARK 12 : 18-27. LUKE 20 : 27-39.

L. 27 THEN the same day came to him certain of the Sadducees, which say that there is no resurrection ; and they asked him,

- 28 saying, Master, Moses wrote unto us, If any man's brother die and leave *his* wife *behind him*, and leave no children, that his brother should marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother. **M.** 25 Now there were with us seven brethren : and the first, when he had married a wife, deceased, and having no issue, left his wife unto his brother : **L.** 30 and the second took her to wife, 31 and he died childless : and the third took her likewise ; and in like manner the seven also ; and they left no children, and died. 32, 33 Last of all the woman died also. In the resurrection therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife shall she be of the seven ? 34 for they all had her to wife. And Jesus answering, said unto them, Do ye not therefore err, because ye know not the scriptures, neither the power of God ? The children of this world marry, 35 and are given in marriage : but they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are given in marriage ; but are as the angels of God which are in 36 heaven. Neither can they die any more ; for they are equal unto the angels ; and are the children of God, being the children of 37 the resurrection. And as touching the resurrection of the dead, that the dead are raised, even Moses shewed. Have ye not read in the book of Moses that which was spoken to you by God, how in the bush God spake unto him saying, I *am* the God of Abra- 38 ham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob ? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living : for all live unto him. Ye therefore do greatly err. And when the multitude heard *this*, they 39 were astonished at his doctrine. Then certain of the scribes answering said, Master, thou hast well said.

Section 126.

The Scribe's Question. The Two Commandments. Christ's Question.

The Temple. Tuesday.

MATTHEW 22 : 34-46. MARK 12 : 28-37. LUKE 20 : 40-44.

M. 34 BUT when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together. **Mk.** 28 And one

of them, a lawyer and one of the scribes, came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked *him a question*, tempting him, and saying, Master, which *is* the first commandment of all, the great commandment in the law? And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments *is*, Hear, O Israel; the Lord our God is one Lord: and thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this *is* the first and great commandment. And the second *is* like unto it, *namely* this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself: there is none other commandment greater than these. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. And the scribe said unto him, Well, Master, thou hast said the truth: for there is one God; and there is none other but he: and to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love *his* neighbour as himself, is more than all the whole burnt offerings and sacrifices. And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God.

M. 41 While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them, while he taught in the temple, How say the scribes that Christ is the son of David? What think ye of Christ? whose son is he? They say unto him, *The son* of David. He saith unto them, How then doth David in spirit call him Lord? For David himself saith by the Holy Ghost, in the book of Psalms, The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool. David therefore himself calleth him Lord; how is he then his son?

46 And no man was able to answer him a word, neither durst any man from that day forth ask him any more questions. And the common people heard him gladly.

Section 127.

Denunciations against the Scribes and Pharisees.

The Temple. Tuesday.

MATTHEW 23 : 1-39. MARK 12 : 38-40. LUKE 20 : 45-47.

M. 1 THEN spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples, saying, The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat: all there-

fore whatsoever they bid you observe, *that* observe and do : but do
4 not ye after their works : for they say, and do not. For they bind
heavy burdens, and grievous to be borne, and lay *them* on men's
shoulders ; but they *themselves* will not move them with one of
5 their fingers. But all their works they do for to be seen of men :
they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of
6 their garments. Beware of the scribes, which love to walk in
long robes, and love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief
7 seats in the synagogues, and greetings in the markets, and to be
8 called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi. But be not ye called Rabbi : for
9 one is your Master, *even* Christ ; and all ye are brethren. And
call no *man* your father upon the earth : for one is your Father,
10 which is in heaven. Neither be ye called masters : for one is your
11 Master, *even* Christ. But he that is greatest among you shall be
12 your servant. And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased ;
and he that shall humble himself shall be exalted.

13 But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for ye
shut up the kingdom of heaven against men : for ye neither go in
14 *yourselves*, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in. Woe
unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for ye devour wid-
ows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayers : therefore ye
15 shall receive the greater damnation. Woe unto you, scribes and
Pharisees, hypocrites ! for ye compass sea and land to make one
proselyte ; and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the
16 child of hell than yourselves. Woe unto you, *ye* blind guides !
which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing ;
but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a
17 debtor. *Ye* fools, and blind ! for whether is greater, the gold, or
18 the temple that sanctifieth the gold ? And, Whosoever shall swear
by the altar, it is nothing ; but whosoever sweareth by the gift
19 that is upon it, he is guilty. *Ye* fools, and blind ! for whether is
20 greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift ? Whoso
therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things
21 thereon. And whoso shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it,
22 and by him that dwelleth therein. And he that shall swear by
heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth
23 thereon. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for
ye pay tithe of mint, and anise, and cummin, and have omitted
the weightier *matters* of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith : these
24 ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. *Ye*
25 blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel. Woe
unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for ye make clean

the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full
 26 of extortion and excess. *Thou* blind Pharisee, cleanse first that
which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may
 27 be clean also. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypo-
 crites ! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed ap-
 pear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead *men's* bones,
 28 and of all uncleanness. Even so ye also outwardly appear right-
 eous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.
 29 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! Because ye
 build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of
 30 the righteous, and say, If we had been in the days of our fathers,
 we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the
 31 prophets. Wherefore, ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye
 32 are the children of them which killed the prophets. Fill ye up
 33 then the measure of your fathers. *Ye* serpents, *ye* generation of
 34 vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell ? Wherefore,
 behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes ;
 and *some* of them ye shall kill and crucify, and *some* of them shall
 ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute *them* from city to
 35 city : that upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon
 the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel, unto the blood of
 Zacharias, son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple
 36 and the altar. Verily, I say unto you, All these things shall come
 upon this generation.

37 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, *thou* that killest the prophets, and
 stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have
 gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chick-
 38 ens under *her* wings, and ye would not ! Behold, your house is
 39 left unto you desolate. For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me
 henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed *is* he that cometh in the
 name of the Lord.

Section 128.

The Widow's Gift. Greeks seek Jesus. Voice from Heaven.

The Temple. Tuesday.

MARK 12 : 41-44. LUKE 21 : 1-4. JOHN 12 : 20-36.

Mk. 41 AND Jesus sat over against the treasury ; and he looked up,
 and beheld how the people cast money into the treasury : and he

saw the rich men casting in their gifts, and many that were rich
 42 cast in much. And he saw also a certain poor widow ; and she
 43 came and threw in two mites, which make a farthing. And he
 called *unto him* his disciples, and saith unto them, Verily I say
 unto you, that this poor widow hath cast more in than all they
 44 which have cast into the treasury : for all these have of their abundance
 cast in unto the offerings of God : but she of her penury
 did cast in all that she had, *even* all her living.

J. 20 And there were certain Greeks among them that came up to
 21 worship at the feast. The same came therefore to Philip, which
 was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying, Sir, we
 22 would see Jesus. Philip cometh and telleth Andrew : and again,
 23 Andrew and Philip tell Jesus. And Jesus answered them, saying,
 24 The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified. Verily,
 verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the
 ground and die, it abideth alone : but if it die, it bringeth forth
 25 much fruit. He that loveth his life shall lose it ; and he that
 26 hateth his life in this world, shall keep it unto life eternal. If
 any man serve me, let him follow me ; and where I am, there
 shall also my servant be : if any man serve me, him will *my*
 27 Father honour. Now is my soul troubled ; and what shall I say ?
 Father, save me from this hour : but for this cause came I unto
 28 this hour. Father, glorify thy name. Then came there a voice
 from heaven, *saying*, I have both glorified *it*, and will glorify *it*
 29 again. The people therefore that stood by, and heard *it*, said that
 30 it thundered. Others said, An angel spake to him. Jesus answered
 and said, This voice came not because of me, but for your
 31 sakes. Now is the judgment of this world : now shall the prince
 32 of this world be cast out. And I, if I be lifted up from the earth,
 33 will draw all *men* unto me. This he said, signifying what death
 34 he should die. The people answered him, We have heard out of
 the law that Christ abideth for ever : and how sayest thou, The
 35 Son of man must be lifted up ? Who is this Son of man ? Then
 Jesus said unto them, Yet a little while is the light with you.
 Walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you : for
 36 he that walketh in darkness knoweth not whither he goeth. While
 ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of
 light.

These things spake Jesus, and departed, and did hide himself
 from them.

Section 129.

Reflections on the Unbelief of the Jews.

JOHN 12 : 37-50.

37 But though he had done so many miracles before them, yet they
 38 believed not on him : that the saying of Esaias the prophet might
 be fulfilled, which he spake, Lord, who hath believed our report ?
 39 and to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed ? Therefore
 40 they could not believe, because that Esaias said again, He hath
 blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart ; that they should
 not see with *their* eyes, nor understand with *their* heart, and be
 41 converted, and I should heal them. These things said Esaias,
 42 when he saw his glory, and spake of him. Nevertheless among
 the chief rulers also many believed on him ; but because of the
 Pharisees they did not confess *him*, lest they should be put out of
 43 the synagogue : for they loved the praise of men more than the
 praise of God.

44 Jesus cried, and said, He that believeth on me, believeth not on
 45 me, but on him that sent me : and he that seeth me seeth him
 46 that sent me. I am come a light into the world, that whoso-
 47 ever believeth in me should not abide in darkness. And if any
 man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not : for I came
 48 not to judge the world, but to save the world. He that rejecteth
 me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him : the
 word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.
 49 For I have not spoken of myself ; but the Father which sent me,
 he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should
 50 speak. And I know that his commandment is life everlasting :
 whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto me, so
 I speak.

Section 130.

Destruction of Jerusalem foretold.

Mount of Olives.

MATTHEW 24 : 1-14. MARK 13 : 1-13. LUKE 21 : 5-19.

M. 1 AND Jesus departed from the temple : and as he went out, his
 disciples came to *him* to shew him the buildings of the temple.

And some spake how it was adorned with goodly stones and gifts ; and one of his disciples saith unto him, Master, see what manner
 2 of stones and what buildings *are here* ! And Jesus answering said unto them, See ye not all these great buildings ? Verily I say unto you, *As for* these things which ye behold, the days will come, in the which there shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

3 And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, over against the temple, the disciples Peter and James and John and Andrew came unto him privately, and asked him, saying, Master, tell us, when shall these things be ? and what *shall be* the sign of thy coming and of the end of the world, when all these things shall be fulfilled ? And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that
 4 no man deceive you. For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ ; and shall deceive many : and the time draweth
 5 near ; go ye not therefore after them. And ye shall hear of wars, and rumours of wars. But when ye shall hear of wars, and commotions, see that ye be not terrified, *and* troubled : for all these
 6 things must first come to pass ; but the end is not yet. Then said he unto them, Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom : and great earthquakes shall be in divers places ; and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and troubles ; and
 7 fearful sights, and great signs shall there be from heaven. These *are* the beginnings of sorrows.

Mk. 9 But take heed to yourselves ; for before all these, they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute *you*, and deliver you up to councils, and to the synagogues, and into prisons, to be afflicted ; and in the synagogues, ye shall be beaten : and ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for my sake ; and they shall kill you : and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake. And it shall
 11 turn to you for a testimony against them. But when they shall lead *you*, and deliver you up, settle *it* therefore in your hearts, *and* take no thought beforehand what ye shall speak, neither premeditate what ye shall answer : but whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye : for it is not ye that speak, but the Holy Ghost. **L.** 15 For I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay nor resist.

M. 10 And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. **Mk.** 12 The brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the son ; and children shall rise up against *their* parents, and shall cause them to be put to death. **L.** 16 And ye shall be betrayed both by parents, and

18 brethren, and kinsfolks, and friends. But there shall not a hair
 19 of your head perish. In your patience possess ye your souls.
 M. 11 And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.
 12 And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax
 13 cold. But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be
 14 saved. And this gospel of the kingdom shall first be preached in
 all the world, for a witness unto all nations ; and then shall the
 end come.

Section 131.

Signs of Coming Destruction.

Mount of Olives.

MATTHEW 24 : 15-36. MARK 13 : 14-32. LUKE 21 : 20-33.

L. 20 AND when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then
 know that the desolation thereof is nigh. M. 15 But when ye
 shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the
 prophet, standing, where it ought not, in the holy place (whoso
 readeth, let him understand), then let them which be in Judea
 16 flee into the mountains ; and let them which are in the midst of
 it depart out ; and let not them that are in the countries enter
 17 therinto. And let him which is on the housetop not go down
 into the house, neither enter to take any thing out of his house ;
 18 neither let him that is in the field turn back again to take up his
 garment. L. 22 For these be the days of vengeance, that all
 23 things which are written may be fulfilled. But woe unto them
 that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days !
 Mk. 18 And pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither
 on the Sabbath-day.
 19 For in those days shall be great tribulation, such as was not from
 the beginning of the creation which God created unto this time,
 no, nor ever shall be. L. 23 For there shall be great distress in
 24 the land, affliction and wrath upon this people. And they shall
 fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into
 all nations : and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles,
 until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled. Mk. 20 And except
 that the Lord had shortened those days, there should no flesh be

saved : but for the elect's sake, whom he hath chosen, those days shall be shortened.

- 21 And then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ ; or,
 22 lo, *he is* there ; believe him not. For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and *shall* shew great signs and wonders : inso-much that, if *it were* possible, they shall deceive the very elect.
- 23 But take ye heed : behold, I have foretold you all things. **M.** 26 Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert ; go not forth : behold, *he is* in the secret chambers ; believe *it*
 27 not. For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west : so shall also the coming of the Son of man
 28 be. For wheresoever the carcass is, there will the eagles be gathered together.
- 29 But immediately after the tribulation of those days, there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars. The sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven ; and upon the earth *shall be* distress of nations, with perplexity ; the sea and the waves roaring ; men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth : for the powers of heaven shall be
 30 shaken. And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven : and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with
 31 power and great glory. And then shall he send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from the uttermost part of the earth to the uttermost part of heaven. **L.** 28 And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads : for your redemption draweth nigh.
- 29 And he spake to them, *saying*, Now learn a parable of the fig-
 30 tree, and all the trees : When the branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye see and know of your own selves that summer
 31 is now nigh at hand. So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things come to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God is nigh at
 32 hand, *even* at the doors. Verily I say unto you, That this genera-
 33 tion shall not pass away, till all these things be fulfilled. Heaven and earth shall pass away : but my words shall not pass away.
- Mk.** 32 But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but my Father only.

Section 132.

Transition to His Final Coming. "Watch!"

Mount of Olives.

MATTHEW 24 : 37-51. MARK 13 : 33-37. LUKE 21 : 34-36.

L. 34 AND take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting and drunkenness, and cares of this
 35 life, and so that day come upon you unawares. For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth. **M.** 37 But as the days of Noe *were*, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For as in the days that were before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in
 38 marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, and knew not until the flood came, and took them all away : so shall also
 39 the coming of the Son of man be. Then shall two be in the field ;
 40 the one shall be taken, and the other left : two *women shall be*
 41 grinding at the mill ; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

L. 36 Take ye heed ; watch therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man. For ye know not what hour your Lord doth come. **M.** 43 But know this, that if the good man of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered
 44 his house to be broken up. Therefore be ye also ready : for in
 such an hour as you think not the Son of man cometh.

Mk. 34 For the Son of man is as a man taking a far journey, who left his house, and gave authority to his servants, and to every man his work, and commanded the porter to watch. **M.** 45 Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over
 46 his household, to give them meat in due season ? Blessed is that
 47 servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. Verily I say unto you, that he shall make him ruler over all his
 48 goods. But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord
 49 delayeth his coming ; and shall begin to smite *his* fellow-servants,
 50 and to eat and drink with the drunken ; the lord of that servant
 shall come in a day when he looketh not for *him*, and in an hour
 51 that he is not aware of ; and shall cut him asunder, and appoint *him* his portion with the hypocrites : there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Mk. 35 Watch ye therefore : for ye know not when the master of the house cometh, at even, or at midnight, or at the cock-crowing,
 36 or in the morning : lest coming suddenly, he find you sleeping.
 37 And what I say unto you, I say unto all, Watch.

Section 133.

The Ten Virgins.

Mount of Olives.

MATTHEW 25 : 1-13.

1 THEN shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom.
 2, 3 And five of them were wise, and five *were* foolish. They that
 4 *were* foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them : but the
 5 wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. While the bride-
 6 groom tarried, they all slumbered and slept. And at midnight
 7 there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh ; go ye out
 8 to meet him. Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their
 9 lamps. And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil ;
 10 for our lamps are gone out. But the wise answered, saying, *Not*
 11 *so* ; lest there be not enough for us and you : but go ye rather to
 12 them that sell, and buy for yourselves. And while they went to
 13 buy, the bridegroom came ; and they that were ready went in
 14 with him to the marriage : and the door was shut. Afterward
 15 came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. But
 16 he answered and said, Verily, I say unto you, I know you not.
 17 Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour where-
 18 in the Son of man cometh.

Section 134.

The Talents.

Mount of Olives.

MATTHEW 25 : 14-30.

14 For the kingdom of heaven is as a man travelling into a far coun-
 15 try, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his

15 goods. And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and
to another one ; to every man according to his several ability ;
16 and straightway took his journey. Then he that had received
the five talents, went and traded with the same, and made *them*
17 other five talents. And likewise he that *had received* two, he also
18 gained other two. But he that had received one, went and digged
in the earth, and hid his lord's money.

19 After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reck-
20 oneth with them. And so he that had received five talents, came,
and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto
me five talents : behold, I have gained beside them five talents
21 more. His lord said unto him, Well done, *thou* good and faithful
servant ; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make
thee ruler over many things : enter thou into the joy of thy lord.
22 He also that had received two talents came and said, Lord, thou
deliveredst unto me two talents : behold, I have gained two other
23 talents beside them. His lord said unto him, Well done, good
and faithful servant ; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I
will make thee ruler over many things : enter thou into the joy of
24 thy lord. Then he which had received the one talent came, and
said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where
thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strewed :
25 and I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth : lo,
26 *there* thou hast *that is* thine. His lord answered and said unto
him, *Thou* wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap
27 where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strewed : thou
oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and
then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury.
28 Take therefore the talent from him, and give *it* unto him which
29 hath ten talents. For unto every one that hath shall be given,
and he shall have abundance : but from him that hath not, shall
30 be taken away even that which he hath. And cast ye the un-
profitable servant into outer darkness : there shall be weeping and
gnashing of teeth.

Section 135.

Description of the Judgment.

Mount of Olives.

MATTHEW 25 : 31-46.

- 31 WHEN the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy
angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory :
32 and before him shall be gathered all nations : and he shall separate
them one from another, as a shepherd divideth *his* sheep from
33 the goats : and he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the
goats on the left.
- 34 Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye
blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from
35 the foundation of the world : for I was an hungered, and ye gave
me meat : I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink : I was a stranger,
36 and ye took me in : naked, and ye clothed me : I was sick, and
37 ye visited me : I was in prison, and ye came unto me. Then
shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we
thee an hungered, and fed *thee* ? or thirsty, and gave *thee* drink ?
38 When saw we thee a stranger, and took *thee* in ? or naked, and
39 clothed *thee* ? Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came
40 unto thee ? And the Kings shall answer and say unto them, Verily,
I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done *it* unto one of the least
of these my brethren, ye have done *it* unto me.
- 41 Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart
from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil
42 and his angels : for I was an hungered, and ye gave me no meat :
43 I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink : I was a stranger, and ye
took me not in : naked, and ye clothed me not : sick, and in
44 prison, and ye visited me not. Then shall they also answer him,
saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered, or athirst, or a
stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister
45 unto thee ? Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily, I say
unto you, Inasmuch as ye did *it* not to one of the least of these,
46 ye did *it* not to me. And these shall go away into everlasting
punishment : but the righteous into life eternal.

Section 136.

Covenant of the Rulers with Judas. Preparation for the Passover.

Jerusalem.

MATTHEW 26 : 1-5, 14-19. MARK 14 : 1, 2, 10-16. LUKE 22 : 1-13.

- L. 1 Now the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the Passover. **M.** 1 And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished 2 all these sayings, he said unto his disciples, Ye know that after two days is *the feast of the passover*, and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified.
- 3 Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who 4 was called Caiaphas, and consulted and sought how they might 5 take Jesus by subtilty, and kill him. But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there be an uproar among the people ; for they feared the people.
- L 3 Then entered Satan into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the 4 number of the twelve. And he went his way unto the chief priests and captains, and communed with *them* how he might betray him 5 unto them. And when they heard *it*, they were glad, and promised to give him money. And *he* said *unto them*, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you ? And they covenanted with 6 him for thirty pieces of silver. And he promised, and from that time sought opportunity how he might conveniently betray him unto them in the absence of the multitude.
- Mk. 12 Now the first day of the *feast of unleavened bread*, when the passover must be killed, the disciples came to Jesus, saying unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare for thee, that 13 thou mayest eat the passover ? And he sendeth forth two of his disciples, Peter and John, and saith unto them, Go ye into the city, and behold, when ye are entered into the city, there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water ; follow him into the 14 house where he entereth in. And wheresoever he shall go in, say ye to the good man of the house : the Master saith unto thee, My time is at hand, I will keep the passover at thy house ; where is the guest-chamber where I shall eat the passover with my disciples ? And he will shew you a large upper room furnished and

16 prepared : there make ready for us. And his disciples went forth, and came into the city, and found as he had said unto them : and, as Jesus had appointed, they made ready the passover.

Section 137.

The Passover Meal. Washes the Disciples' Feet.

The Guest-Chamber.

MATTHEW 26 : 20. MARK 14 : 17. LUKE 22 : 14-18, 24-27. JOHN 13 : 1-17.

J. 1 Now before the feast of the passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end.

L. 14 And in the evening when the hour was come, he sat down, 15 and the twelve apostles with him. And he said unto them, With desire I have desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer. 16 For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be 17 fulfilled in the kingdom of God. And he took the cup, and gave 18 thanks, and said, Take this, and divide it among yourselves. For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come.

24 And there was also a strife among them, which of them should 25 be accounted the greatest. And he said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them ; and they that exercise 26 authority upon them are called benefactors. But ye *shall not be* so : but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger ; 27 and he that is chief, as he that doth serve. For whether *is greater*, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth ? *is not he that sitteth at meat ?* but I am among you as he that serveth.

J. 2 And supper being ended (the devil having now put it into the 3 heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray him) ; Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he 4 was come from God, and went to God ; he riseth from supper, and 5 laid aside his garments, and took a towel, and girded himself. After that, he poureth water into a basin, and began to wash the

disciples' feet, and to wipe *them* with the towel wherewith he was girded. Then cometh he to Simon Peter : and Peter saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet? Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do thou knowest not now ; but thou shalt know hereafter. Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me. Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also *my* hands, and *my* head. Jesus saith to him, He that is washed needeth not save to wash *his* feet, but is clean every whit : and ye are clean, but not all. For he knew who should betray him : therefore said he, Ye are not all clean.

So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set down again, he said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you ? Ye call me Master, and Lord ; and ye say well, for so I am. If I then, *your* Lord and Master, have washed your feet ; ye also ought to wash one another's feet. For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you. Verily, verily, I say unto you, The servant is not greater than his Lord ; neither he that is sent greater than he that sent him. If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them.

Section 138.

One of You shall betray Me.

The Guest-Chamber.

MATTHEW 26 : 21-25. MARK 14 : 18-21. LUKE 22 : 21-23, 28-30.
JOHN 13 : 18-30.

L. 28 YE are they which have continued with me in my temptations ; and I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me ; that ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

J. 18 I speak not of you all : I know whom I have chosen ; but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me, hath lifted up his heel against me. Now I tell you before it come, that when it is come to pass, ye may believe that I am *he*. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send re-

- ceiveth me ; and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.
- 21 When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit ; and as they sat and did eat, *he* testified and said, Behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me *is* with me on the table. Verily, verily, I say unto you, that one of you which eateth with me shall betray me.
- 22 Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake ; and they began to inquire among themselves, which of them it was that should do this thing. **M.** 22 And they were exceeding sorrowful, and, one by one, began every one of them to say
- 23 unto him, Lord, is it I ? And he answered and said unto them, *It is* one of the twelve, that dippeth *his* hand with me in the dish ;
- 24 the same shall betray me. The Son of man indeed goeth, as it is written of him : but woe unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed ! good were it for that man if he had never been born.
- 25 Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered and said, Master, is it I ? He said unto him, Thou hast said.
- J. 23 Now there was leaning on Jesus' bosom one of his disciples,
- 24 whom Jesus loved. Simon Peter therefore beckoned to him, that
- 25 he should ask who it should be of whom he spake. He then, lying on Jesus' breast, saith unto him, Lord, who is it ? Jesus answered, He it is, to whom I shall give a sop, when I have dipped *it*. And when he had dipped the sop, he gave *it* to Judas Iscariot,
- 27 *the son* of Simon. And after the sop Satan entered into him.
- 28 Then said Jesus unto him, That thou doest, do quickly. Now no man at the table knew for what intent he spake this unto him.
- 29 For some of *them* thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, Buy *those things* that we have need of against
- 30 the feast ; or, that he should give something to the poor. He then, having received the sop, went immediately out : and it was night.

Section 139.

Foretells the Denial of Peter, and the Dispersion of the Twelve.

The Guest-Chamber.

MATTHEW 26 : 31-35. MARK 14 : 27-31. LUKE 22 : 31-38. JOHN 13 : 31-38.

J. 31 THEREFORE, when he was gone out, Jesus said, Now is the 32 Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him. If God be

glorified in him, God shall also glorify him in himself, and shall
 33 straightway glorify him. Little children, yet a little while I am
 with you. Ye shall seek me; and as I said unto the Jews,
 34 Whither I go, ye cannot come; so now I say to you. A new com-
 mandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have
 35 loved you, that ye also love one another. By this shall all *men*
 know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

36 Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus
 answered him, Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now; but
 37 thou shalt follow me afterward. Peter said unto him, Lord, why
 cannot I follow thee now? I will lay down my life for thy sake.
 38 Jesus answered him, Wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake?
 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, The cock shall not crow, till thou
 hast denied me thrice.

M. 31 Then saith Jesus unto them, All ye shall be offended because
 of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and
 32 the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad. But after that I
 33 am risen again, I will go before you into Galilee. But Peter an-
 swered and said unto him, Though all *men* shall be offended be-
 cause of thee, yet will I never be offended. **L.** 31 And the Lord
 said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired *to have* you, that
 32 he may sift *you* as wheat: but I have prayed for thee, that thy
 faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy breth-
 33 ren. And he said unto him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee,
 both into prison, and to death. **Mk.** 30 And Jesus answered
 and said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, Peter, that this day,
 32 *even* in this night, before the cock crow twice, thou shalt thrice
 31 deny that thou knowest me. But Peter spake the more vehe-
 mently unto him, Though I should die with thee, yet will I not
 deny thee in any wise. Likewise also said all the disciples.

L. 35 And he said unto them, When I sent you without purse, and
 scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing? and they said, Nothing.
 36 Then said he unto them, But now, he that hath a purse, let him
 take *it*, and likewise *his* scrip: and he that hath no sword, let him
 37 sell his garment, and buy one. For I say unto you, that this that
 is written must yet be accomplished in me, And he was reckoned
 among the transgressors: for the things concerning me have an
 38 end. And they said, Lord, behold, here *are* two swords. And he
 said unto them, It is enough.

Section 140.

The Lord's Supper instituted.

The Guest-Chamber.

MATTHEW 26 : 26-29. MARK 14 : 22-25. LUKE 22 : 19, 20. 1 COR-
INTHIANS 11 : 23-26.

M. 26 AND as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and when he had blessed, *or* given thanks, he brake it and gave *it* to the disciples, and said, Take, eat ; this is my body, which is given, broken, for
27 you : this do in remembrance of me. Likewise also after supper he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave *it* to them, saying,
28 Drink ye all of it ; and they all drank of it. And he said unto them, This cup is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for you and for many, for the remission of sins. This do ye, as
29 oft as ye drink *it*, in remembrance of me. Verily I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom. **1 Cor.**
26 For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till he come.

Section 141.

Last Discourse.

The Guest-Chamber.

JOHN 14 : 1-14.

1 LET not your heart be troubled : ye believe in God, believe also
2 in me. In my Father's house are many mansions : if *it were* not
3 so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And
if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive
4 you unto myself ; that where I am, *there* ye may be also. And
whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.
5 Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest ;
6 and how can we know the way ? Jesus saith unto him, I am the

way, the truth, and the life : no man cometh unto the Father, but
 7 by me. If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father
 also : and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him.
 8 Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it suffic-
 9 eth us. Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you,
 and yet hast thou not known me, Philip ? he that hath seen me,
 hath seen the Father ; and how sayest thou *then*, Shew us the
 10 Father ? Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father
 in me ? the words that I speak unto you, I speak not of myself :
 11 but the Father, that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works. Believe
 me that I *am* in the Father, and the Father in me : or else believe
 12 me for the very works' sake. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He
 that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also ; and
 greater *works* than these shall he do ; because I go unto my Fa-
 13 ther. And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that
 14 the Father may be glorified in the Son. If ye shall ask any thing
 in my name, I will do *it*.

Section 142.

Last Discourse : Another Comforter.

The Guest-Chamber.

JOHN 14 : 15-31.

15, 16 If ye love me, keep my commandments : and I will pray the
 Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may
 17 abide with you for ever ; *even* the Spirit of truth ; whom the world
 cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him :
 but ye know him ; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.
 18, 19 I will not leave you comfortless : I will come to you. Yet a
 little while, and the world seeth me no more ; but ye see me : be-
 20 cause I live, ye shall live also. At that day ye shall know that I
 21 *am* in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you. He that hath my
 commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me : and
 he that loveth me, shall be loved of my Father, and I will love
 him, and will manifest myself to him.
 22 Judas saith unto him (not Iscariot), Lord, how is it that thou

23 wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not unto the world? Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words : and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, 24 and make our abode with him. He that loveth me not, keepeth not my sayings : and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me.

25 These things have I spoken unto you, being *yet* present with 26 you. But the Comforter, *which is* the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said 27 unto you. Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you : not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be 28 troubled, neither let it be afraid. Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come *again* unto you. If ye loved me ye would rejoyce, because I said, I go unto the Father : for my Fa- 29 ther is greater than I. And now I have told you before it come to 30 pass, that when it is come to pass, ye might believe. Hereafter I will not talk much with you : for the prince of this world cometh, 31 and hath nothing in me. But that the world may know that I love the Father ; and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do. Arise, let us go hence,

Section 143.

Christ the Vine. Abiding in Him.

The Guest-Chamber.

JOHN 15 : 1-11.

1, 2 I AM the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he taketh away : and every *branch* that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth 3 more fruit. Now ye are clean through the word which I have 4 spoken unto you. Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine : no more 5 can ye, except ye abide in me. I am the vine, ye *are* the branches : he that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth 6 forth much fruit : for without me ye can do nothing. If a man

abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered ; and men gather them, and cast *them* into the fire, and they are
 7 burned. If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall
 8 ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. Herein is my
 Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit ; so shall ye be my dis-
 9 ciples. As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you : con-
 10 tinue ye in my love. If ye keep my commandments, ye shall
 abide in my love ; even as I have kept my Father's command-
 ments, and abide in his love.
 11 These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain
 in you, and *that* your joy might be full.

Section 144.

Last Discourse: Mutual Love.

The Guest-Chamber.

JOHN 15 : 12-27.

12 THIS is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have
 13 loved you. Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay
 14 down his life for his friends. Ye are my friends, if ye do whatso-
 15 ever I command you. Henceforth I call you not servants ; for
 the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth : but I have called
 you friends ; for all things that I have heard of my Father, I have
 16 made known unto you. Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen
 you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit,
 and *that* your fruit should remain : that whatsoever ye shall ask
 17 of the Father in my name, he may give it you. These things I
 command you, that ye love one another.
 18 If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before *it hated*
 19 you. If ye were of the world, the world would love his own ; but
 because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the
 20 world, therefore the world hateth you. Remember the word that
 I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they
 have persecuted me, they will also persecute you : if they have
 21 kept my saying, they will keep yours also. But all these things
 they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him

22 that sent me. If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had
 23 not had sin : but now they have no cloak for their sin. He that
 24 hateth me, hateth my Father also. If I had not done among
 them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin :
 but now have they both seen and hated both me and my Father.
 25 But *this cometh to pass*, that the word might be fulfilled that is
 written in their law, They hated me without a cause.
 26 But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you
 from the Father, *even* the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from
 27 the Father, he shall testify of me. And ye also shall bear witness,
 because ye have been with me from the beginning.

Section 145.

Persecution foretold. Office Work of the Spirit.

The Guest-Chamber.

JOHN 16 : 1-15.

1 THESE things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be
 2 offended. They shall put you out of the synagogues : yea, the
 time cometh, that whosoever killeth you, will think that he doeth
 3 God service. And these things will they do unto you, because
 4 they have not known the Father, nor me. But these things have
 I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that
 I told you of them. And these things I said not unto you at the
 5 beginning because I was with you. But now I go my way to him
 that sent me, and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou ?
 6 But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled
 7 your heart. Nevertheless I tell you the truth : it is expedient for
 you that I go away : for if I go not away, the Comforter will not
 8 come unto you ; but if I depart, I will send him unto you. And
 when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of right-
 9 eousness, and of judgment : of sin, because they believe not on
 10 me ; of righteousness, because I go to my Father, and ye see me
 11 no more ; of judgment, because the prince of this world is judged.
 12 I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear
 13 them now. Howbeit, when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he

will guide you into all truth : for he shall not speak of himself ; but whatsoever he shall hear, *that* shall he speak : and he will
 14 shew you things to come. He shall glorify me : for he shall receive
 15 of mine, and shall shew *it* unto you. All things that the Father hath are mine : therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shall shew *it* unto you.

Section 146.

Last Discourse : "Ask in My Name."

The Guest-Chamber.

JOHN 16 : 16-33.

- 16 A LITTLE while, and ye shall not see me : and again, a little
 17 while, and ye shall see me, because I go to the Father. Then said *some* of his disciples among themselves, What is this that he saith unto us, A little while, and ye shall not see me : and again, a little while, and ye shall see me : and, Because I go to the Father?
 18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while?
 19 We cannot tell what he saith. Now Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him, and said unto them, Do ye inquire among yourselves of that I said, A little while, and ye shall not see me :
 20 and again, a little while, and ye shall see me? Verily, verily, I say unto you, that ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice : and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be
 21 turned into joy. A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come : but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man
 22 is born into the world. And ye now therefore have sorrow : but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no
 23 man taketh from you. And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Fa-
 24 ther in my name, he will give *it* you. Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name : ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.
- 25 These things have I spoken unto you in proverbs : but the time cometh when I shall no more speak unto you in proverbs, but I

26 shall show you plainly of the Father. At that day ye shall ask in my name : and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for
 27 you : for the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved
 28 me, and have believed that I came out from God. I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world : again, I leave the
 29 world, and go to the Father. His disciples said unto him, Lo,
 30 now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no proverb. Now are we sure that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee : by this we believe that thou camest forth
 31, 32 from God. Jesus answered them, Do ye now believe? Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is now come, that ye shall be scattered every man to his own, and shall leave me alone : and yet I am not
 33 alone, because the Father is with me. These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation, but be of good cheer : I have overcome the world.

Section 147.

The Prayer for His Own.

The Guest-Chamber.

JOHN 17 : 1-12.

1 THESE words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come ; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also
 2 may glorify thee : as thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him.
 3 And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true
 4 God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent. I have glorified thee on the earth : I have finished the work which thou gavest me
 5 to do. And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.
 6 I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world : thine they were, and thou gavest them me ;
 7 and they have kept thy word. Now they have known that all
 8 things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee : for I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me ; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee,

9 and they have believed that thou didst send me. I pray for them :
 I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me ;
 10 for they are thine. And all mine are thine, and thine are mine ;
 11 and I am glorified in them. And now I am no more in the world,
 but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep
 through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that
 12 they may be one, as we are. While I was with them in the world,
 I kept them in thy name : those that thou gavest me I have kept,
 and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition ; that the scrip-
 ture might be fulfilled,

Section 148.

Prayer for their Sanctification and Oneness.

The Guest-Chamber.

JOHN 17 : 13-26.

13 AND now come I to thee, and these things I speak in the world,
 14 that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves. I have given
 them thy word ; and the world hath hated them, because they are
 15 not of the world, even as I am not of the world. I pray not that
 thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest
 16 keep them from the evil. They are not of the world, even as I am
 17 not of the world. Sanctify them through thy truth : thy word is
 18 truth. As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also
 19 sent them into the world. And for their sakes I sanctify myself,
 that they also might be sanctified through the truth.
 20 Neither pray I for these alone ; but for them also which shall
 21 believe on me through their word : that they all may be one ; as
 thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one
 22 in us : that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. And
 the glory which thou gavest me, I have given them ; that they
 23 may be one, even as we are one ; I in them, and thou in me, that
 they may be made perfect in one ; and that the world may know
 that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them as thou hast loved
 me.
 24 Father, I will that they also whom thou hast given me be with

me where I am ; that they may behold my glory which thou hast given me : for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world.
 25 O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee ; but I have
 26 known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me. And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare *it* : that the love wherewith thou hast loved me, may be in them, and I in them.

Section 149.

The Agony in Gethsemane.

MATTHEW 26 : 30, 36-46. MARK 14 : 26, 32-42. LUKE 22 : 39-46.
 JOHN 18 : 1.

J. 1 WHEN Jesus had spoken these words and when they had sung an hymn, he went forth, as he was wont, over the brook Cedron to the mount of Olives ; and his disciples also followed him. **M.**
 36 Then cometh Jesus with them unto a place called Gethsemane, where was a garden, into the which he entered, and his disciples. And when he was at the place, he said unto them, Sit ye here while I go and pray yonder.
 37 And he took with him Peter, and James and John, the two sons of Zebedee, and he began to be sorrowful, sore amazed, and very
 38 heavy. Then saith he unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrow-
 39 ful, even unto death : tarry ye here, and watch with me. And he went a little further, and was withdrawn from them about a stone's cast ; and *he* kneeled down, fell on his face on the ground, and prayed that if it were possible, the hour might pass from him. And he said, Abba, O my Father, all things are possible unto thee ; if it be possible, if thou be willing, take away this cup from me :
 40 nevertheless, not my will, but thine, be done. And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them sleeping, and saith unto Peter, Simon, sleepest thou ? what, couldest not thou watch with
 41 me one hour ? Watch ye and pray, that ye enter not into temp-
 42 tation : the spirit indeed *is* willing, but the flesh *is* weak. And he went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it,
 43 thy will be done. And when he returned, he found them asleep

again, for their eyes were heavy ; neither wist they what to answer him. And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words. **L.** 43 And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him. And being in agony, he prayed more earnestly : and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground.

45 And when he rose up from prayer, and was come the third time to his disciples, he found them sleeping for sorrow, and said unto them, Why sleep ye now, and take your rest ? it is enough ; rise and pray, lest ye enter into temptation. **Mk.** 41 Behold, the hour is come, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners. Rise up, let us go ; lo, he that betrayeth me is at hand.

Section 150.

The Betrayal and Apprehension.

The Garden—Gethsemane.

MATTHEW 26 : 47-56. MARK 14 : 43-52. LUKE 22 : 47-53. JOHN 18 : 2-12.

- J. 2 AND Judas also, which betrayed him, knew the place : for Jesus oftentimes resorted thither with his disciples. **Mk.** 43 And immediately, while he yet spake, lo, he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, having received a band of men and officers from the chief priests and Pharisees, and the scribes and elders of the people, cometh hither and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, with lanterns and torches.
- 44 Now he that betrayed him, had given them a token, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he ; take him, and hold him fast, and lead him away safely. And Judas went before them, and drew near unto Jesus to kiss him. And Jesus said unto him,
- 45 Friend, wherefore art thou come ? And as soon as he was come, he goeth straightway to him, and saith, Hail, master, master ; and kissed him. **L.** 48 But Jesus said unto him, Judas, betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss ?
- J. 4 Jesus therefore, knowing all things that should come upon him, 5 went forth, and said unto them, Whom seek ye ? They answered

- him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them, I am *he*. And
 6 Judas also, which betrayed him, stood with them. As soon then
 as he had said unto them, I am *he*, they went backward, and fell
 7 to the ground. Then asked he them again, Whom seek ye?
 8 And they said, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus answered, I have told
 you that I am *he*. If therefore ye seek me, let these go their way :
 9 that the saying might be fulfilled which he spake, Of them which
 thou gavest me, have I lost none.
- 12 Then the band, and the captain, and officers of the Jews laid
 hands on Jesus, and took him, and bound him. **L.** 49 When
 they which were about him saw what would follow, they said unto
 50 him, Lord, shall we smite with the sword? And, behold, one of
 them which were with Jesus, Simon Peter, having a sword,
 stretched out his hand and drew it, and smote the high priest's
 servant, and cut off his right ear. The servant's name was Mal-
 51 chus. And Jesus answered and said, Suffer ye thus far. And
 he touched his ear, and healed him. **M.** 52 Then said Jesus unto
 Peter, Put up again thy sword into the sheath : for all they that
 53 take the sword shall perish with the sword. Thinkest thou that
 I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me
 54 more than twelve legions of angels? But how then shall the
 scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be? The cup which my
 Father hath given me, shall I not drink it?
- 55 In that same hour said Jesus unto the chief priests and cap-
 tains of the temple, and to the elders and the multitudes which
 were come to him, Are ye come out as against a thief, with swords
 and staves to take me? I sat daily with you in the temple, teach-
 ing, and ye stretched forth no hands against me, ye laid no hold
 56 on me ; but this is your hour, and the power of darkness. But
 all this was done, that the scriptures of the prophets might be
 fulfilled. **Mk.** 51 Then all the disciples forsook him, and fled.
 And there followed him a certain young man, having a linen cloth
 cast about *his* naked body ; and the young men laid hold on him.
 52 And he left the linen cloth, and fled from them naked.

Section 151.

Led to Annas. Peter's Denial.

The Palace of Annas.

MATTHEW 26 : 58, 69-75. MARK 14 : 54, 66-72. LUKE 22 : 54-62.
JOHN 18 : 13-18, 25-27.

- J. 13 AND they that had laid hold on Jesus, led him away to Annas first ; for he was father-in-law to Caiaphas, which was the high
14 priest that same year. Now Caiaphas was he which gave counsel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.
- 15 And Simon Peter followed Jesus afar off, and *so did* another disciple. That disciple was known unto the high priest, and
16 went in with Jesus, into the palace of the high priest. But Peter stood at the door without. Then went out that other disciple which was known unto the high priest, and spake unto her that
18 kept the door, and brought in Peter. And the servants and officers had made a fire of coals (for it was cold) ; and they warmed themselves : and Peter stood with them, and warmed himself.
- L. 55 And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the hall, and were set down together, Peter sat down among them, to see the end.
- Mk. 66 And as Peter sat without, beneath in the palace, there cometh unto him one of the maids of the high priest, the damsel that
67 kept the door. And when she saw Peter as he sat by the fire, warming himself, she earnestly looked upon him, and said, Art thou not *one* of this man's disciples ? Thou also wast with Jesus
68 of Galilee : This man was with him of Nazareth. But he denied before *them* all, saying, Woman, I am not, I know him not, neither understand I what thou sayest. And he went out into the porch ; and the cock crew.
- M. 71 And when he was gone out into the porch, another *maid* saw him, and said unto them that were there, This is *one* of them *that* was also with Jesus of Nazareth. And another saw him, and said, Thou art also of them. And Peter said, Man, I am not. They said therefore unto him, Art thou not also *one* of his disciples ?
72 And again he denied with an oath, I am not, I do not know the man.

L. 59 And after about the space of one hour, another confidently affirmed, saying, Of a truth this *fellow* was also with him ; for he is a Galilean. And they that stood by said unto Peter, Surely thou art *one* of them, for thou art a Galilean, and thy speech bewrayeth thee. One of the servants of the high priest (being *his* kinsman whose ear Peter cut off) saith, Did not I see thee in the
 60 garden with him ? Peter then denied again, and began to curse and to swear, and said, Man, I know not what thou sayest ; I know not this man of whom ye speak. And immediately, while
 61 he yet spake, the second time the cock crew. And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter. And Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how he had said unto him, Before the cock crow twice, thou
 62 shalt deny me thrice. And when he thought thereon, he went out, and wept bitterly.

Section 152.

Interrogated by Annas. Examined and condemned by the Sanhedrim.

The Palace of Annas, and that of Caiaphas.

MATTHEW 26 : 57, 59-68. MARK 14 : 53, 55-65. LUKE 22 : 63-71.
 JOHN 18 : 19-24.

J. 19 THE high priest then asked Jesus of his disciples, and of his
 20 doctrine. Jesus answered him, I spake openly to the world ; I ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, whither the
 21 Jews always resort ; and in secret have I said nothing. Why askest thou me ? Ask them which heard me, what I have said
 22 unto them : behold, they know what I said. And when he had thus spoken, one of the officers which stood by struck Jesus with the palm of his hand, saying, Answerest thou the high priest so ?
 23 Jesus answered him, If I have spoken evil, bear witness of the evil : but if well, why smitest thou me ?
 24 Now Annas sent him bound unto Caiaphas the high priest.
 L. 66 And as soon as it was day they brought him into the house of Caiaphas, where the elders of the people and the chief priests and the scribes came together, and led him into their council,

67 saying, Art thou the Christ? tell us. And he said unto them,
 68 If I tell you, ye will not believe; and if I also ask *you*, ye will not
 answer me, nor let me go. **Mk.** 55 And the chief priests, and
 all the council, sought false witness against Jesus to put him to
 56 death: and found none. For many bare false witness against
 57 him, but their witness agreed not together. And at the last came
 58 two false witnesses, and said, We heard him say, I will destroy
 this temple that is made with hands, and within three days I will
 59 build another made without hands. But neither so did their
 witness agree together.

60 And the high priest arose *and* stood up in the midst, and asked
 Jesus, saying, Answerest thou nothing? what *is it which* these
 61 witness against thee? But Jesus held his peace, and answered
 nothing. **M.** 63 Again the high priest asked him, and said unto
 him, I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us whether
 64 thou be the Christ, the Son of God, the Son of the Blessed? And
 Jesus said unto him, Thou hast said; I am. Nevertheless, I say
 unto you, Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the
 right hand of the power of God, and coming in the clouds of
 heaven.

Then said they all, Art thou then the Son of God? And he
 65 said unto them, Ye say that I am. Then the high priest rent his
 clothes, saying, He hath spoken blasphemy; what further need
 have we of witnesses? behold, now ye have heard his blasphemy.
 66 What think ye? And they all answered, and condemned him,
 and said, We ourselves have heard of his own mouth. He is
 guilty of death.

67 Then the men that held Jesus, when they had blindfolded him,
 did spit in his face, mocked him and buffeted him; and others
 68 smote *him* with the palms of their hands, saying, Prophecy unto
 us, thou Christ, Who is he that smote thee? And many other
 things blasphemously spake they against him.

Section 153.

Death of Judas. Jesus brought before Pilate.

MATTHEW 27: 1-14. MARK 15: 1-5. LUKE 23: 1-5. JOHN 18: 28-38.

M. 3 THEN Judas, which had betrayed him, when he saw that he
 was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty

4 pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, 5 What *is that* to us? see thou *to that*. And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself.

6 And the chief priests took the silver pieces, and said, It is not lawful for to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of 7 blood. And they took counsel, and bought with them the potter's field, to bury strangers in. Wherefore that field was called, 9 The field of blood, unto this day. Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued, whom 10 they of the children of Israel did value; and gave them for the potter's field, as the Lord appointed me.

1 And straightway, when the morning was come, all the chief priests held a consultation with the elders and scribes and the 2 whole council, against Jesus to put him to death. And the whole multitude of them arose, and when they had bound Jesus, they led *him* away from Caiaphas unto the hall of judgment, and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor. **J.** 28 And it was early; and they themselves went not into the judgment hall, lest they should be defiled; but that they might eat the passover.

29 Pilate then went out unto them, and said, What accusation 30 bring ye against this man? They answered and said unto him, If he were not a malefactor, we would not have delivered him up 31 unto thee. Then said Pilate unto them, Take ye him, and judge him according to your law. The Jews therefore said unto him, 32 It is not lawful for us to put any man to death: that the saying of Jesus might be fulfilled, which he spake, signifying what death he should die. **L.** 2 And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this *fellow* perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cesar, saying, that he himself is Christ a King.

J. 33 Then Pilate entered into the judgment hall again, and called Jesus. And Jesus stood before the governor; and the governor 34 asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Jews? Jesus answered him, Sayest thou this thing of thyself, or did others tell it 35 thee of me? Pilate answered, Am I a Jew? Thine own nation, and the chief priests, have delivered thee unto me. What hast 36 thou done? Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my king- 37 dom not from hence. Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou a

king then? Jesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth, heareth my voice. Pilate saith unto him, What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews, and saith unto them, I find in him no fault *at all*.

Mk. 3 And the chief priests and elders accused him of many things : 4 but he answered nothing. And Pilate asked him again, saying, Answerest thou nothing? hearest thou not how many things they 5 witness against thee? But Jesus yet answered him to never a word ; insonmuch that the governor marvelled greatly.

L. 4 Then said Pilate to the chief priests and to the people, I find 5 no fault in this man. And they were the more fierce, saying, He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Jewry, beginning from Galilee to this place.

Section 154.

Before Herod and Pilate again. Barabbas preferred.

MATTHEW 27 : 15-26. MARK 15 : 6-15. LUKE 23 : 6-25. JOHN 18 : 39, 40.

L. 6 WHEN Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were 7 a Galilean. And as soon as he knew that he belonged unto Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself also was at Jerusalem at that time.

8 And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad : for he was desirous to see him of a long *season*, because he had heard many things of him ; and he hoped to have seen some miracle 9 done by him. Then he questioned with him in many words ; but 10 he answered him nothing. And the chief priests and scribes 11 stood and vehemently accused him. And Herod with his men of war set him at nought, and mocked *him*, and arrayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him again to Pilate. And the same day 12 Pilate and Herod were made friends together ; for before they were at enmity between themselves.

13 And Pilate, when he had called together the chief priests, and 14 the rulers, and the people, said unto them, Ye have brought this

- man unto me, as one that perverteth the people : and, behold, I, having examined *him* before you, have found no fault in this man, touching those things whereof ye accuse him : no, nor yet Herod : for I sent you to him : and, lo, nothing worthy of death is done unto him. I will therefore chastise him, and release *him*.
- M. 15 Now at *that* feast, the governor was wont to release unto the people a prisoner, whomsoever they desired. And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas, a robber, who, for a certain sedition made in the city, and for murder, was cast into prison with them that had made insurrection with him. And the multitude crying aloud, began to desire *him to do* as he had ever done unto them. (For of necessity he must release one unto them at the feast.) Therefore when they were gathered together, Pilate said unto them, Ye have a custom, that I should release unto you one at the passover : whom will ye therefore that I release unto you ? Barabbas, or Jesus, which is called Christ ? will ye that I release unto you the king of the Jews ? For he knew that the chief priests had delivered him for envy.
- 19 When he was set down on the judgment seat, his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that just man : for I have suffered many things this day in a dream, because of him.
- 20 But the chief priests and elders persuaded the multitude that they should ask Barabbas, and destroy Jesus. The governor answered and said unto them, Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you ? And they cried out all at once, Away with this man, and release unto us Barabbas. **L.** 20 Pilate therefore, willing to release Jesus, spake again to them, saying, What shall I do then with Jesus which is called Christ ? *him* whom ye call the king of the Jews ? And they all cried out again, saying, Crucify *him*, crucify him. Then Pilate said unto them the third time, Why, what evil hath he done ? I have found no cause of death in him ; I will therefore chastise him, and let *him* go. And they cried out the more exceedingly, they were instant with loud voices, requiring that he might be crucified. And the voices of them and of the chief priests prevailed.
- M. 24 When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but *that* rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed *his* hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this just person : see ye *to it*. Then answered all the people, and said, His blood be on us, and on our children. Then Pilate, willing to content the people, gave sentence that it should be as they re-

quired. And he released Barabbas unto them, that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired ; but he delivered Jesus to their will.

Section 155.

Jesus scourged, mocked, and delivered up.

MATTHEW 27 : 26-30. MARK 15 : 15-19. JOHN 19 : 1-16.

- M. 26 THEN Pilate therefore took Jesus, and scourged *him*. And when he had scourged Jesus, he delivered *him* to be crucified.
- 27 Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the common hall, called Pretorium, and gathered unto him the whole band of
- 28 *soldiers*. And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe.
- 29 And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put *it* upon his head, and a reed in his right hand : and they bowed the knee before him, worshipped and mocked him, saying, Hail, King of
- 30 the Jews ! And they spit upon him, and smote him with their hands, and took the reed and smote him on the head.
- J. 4 Pilate therefore went forth again, and saith unto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye may know that I find no
- 5 fault in him. Then came Jesus forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and the purple robe. And *Pilate* saith unto them, Behold
- 6 the man ! When the chief priests therefore and officers saw him, they cried out, saying, Crucify *him*, crucify *him*. Pilate saith unto them, Take ye him, and crucify *him* : for I find no fault in him.
- 7 The Jews answered him, We have a law, and by our law he ought to die, because he made himself the Son of God.
- 8 When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he was the more
- 9 afraid ; and went again into the judgment hall and saith unto Je-
- 10 sus, Whence art thou ? But Jesus gave him no answer. Then saith Pilate unto him, Speakest thou not unto me ? Knowest thou not that I have power to crucify thee, and have power to re-
- 11 lease thee ? Jesus answered, Thou couldest have no power *at all* against me, except it were given thee from above : therefore he that delivered me unto thee hath the greater sin.
- 12 And from thenceforth Pilate sought to release him. But the Jews cried out, saying, If thou let this man go, thou art not Ce-

sar's friend : whosoever maketh himself a king, speaketh against
 13 Cesar. When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he brought Je-
 sus forth, and sat down in the judgment seat, in a place that is
 14 called the Pavement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha. And it was
 the preparation of the passover, and about the sixth hour. And
 15 he saith unto the Jews, Behold your King ! But they cried out,
 Away with *him* ! Away with *him* ! crucify him. Pilate saith unto
 them, Shall I crucify your King ? The chief priests answered,
 16 We have no king but Cesar. Then delivered he him therefore
 unto them to be crucified.

Section 156.

Led away and crucified.

MATTHEW 27 : 31-34, 38. MARK 15 : 20-23, 25, 27, 28. LUKE 23 :
 26-34. JOHN 19 : 16-18.

M. 31 AND after that they had mocked him, they took off the purple
 robe from him, and put his own raiment on him, and led him
 away to crucify him. And he bearing his cross went forth. **L.** 26
 And as they came out *and* led him away, they laid hold upon a
 man of Cyrene, Simon by name, the father of Alexander and Ru-
 fus, who passed by coming out of the country ; and on him they
 laid the cross, and compelled him to bear *it* after Jesus.

27 And there followed him a great company of people, and of
 28 women, which also bewailed and lamented him. But Jesus turn-
 ing unto them, said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me,
 29 but weep for yourselves and for your children. For behold, the
 days are coming in the which they shall say, Blessed *are* the
 barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the paps which never
 30 gave suck. Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall
 31 on us ; and to the hills, Cover us. For if they do these things
 in a green tree, what shall be done in the dry ?

32 And there were also two others, malefactors, led with him to be
 33 put to death. And when they were come to the place which is
 called Calvary (in the Hebrew Golgotha, which is, being inter-
 preted, The place of a skull), they gave him to drink vinegar, [*or*
acid] wine, mingled with myrrh, [*or*] gall : but when he had

tasted *thereof*, he would not drink. **Mk.** 27 And it was the third hour, and there they crucified him. And with him they crucified the two thieves, the one on his right hand, and the other on his
 28 left, and Jesus in the midst. And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, And he was numbered with the transgressors.
L. 34 Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them ; for they know not what they do.

Section 157.

The Parted Garments. The Title. The Two Malefactors.

MATTHEW 27 : 35-37, 39-44. **MARK** 15 : 24, 26, 29-32. **LUKE** 23 : 34-43. **JOHN** 19 : 19-24.

J. 23 **THEN** the soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments, and made four parts, to every soldier a part ; and also *his* coat : now the coat was without seam, woven from the top
 24 throughout. They said therefore among themselves, Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it whose it shall be. And they parted his garments, casting lots upon them, what every man should take. That the scripture might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, They parted my garments among them, and for my vesture they did cast lots. These things therefore the soldiers did. And sitting down they watched him there.
 19 And Pilate wrote a title, a superscription of his accusation, and put *it* on the cross over his head. And the writing was, This is
 20 **JESUS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF THE JEWS.** This title then read many of the Jews : for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city : and it was written in letters of Greek,
 21 and Latin, and Hebrew. Then said the chief priests of the Jews to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Jews ; but that he said, I am
 22 King of the Jews. Pilate answered, What I have written, I have written.
M. 39 And they that passed by, reviled him, wagging their heads,
 40 and saying, Ah, thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest *it* in three days, save thyself. If thou be the Son of God, come down from the cross. And the people stood beholding ; and the
 41 rulers with them derided *him*. Likewise also the chief priests,

42 mocking, said among themselves with the scribes and elders, He saved others ; himself he cannot save. If he be Christ the King of Israel, the chosen of God, let him save himself : let him now come down from the cross that we may see, and we will believe him. He trusted in God ; let him deliver him now if he will have him : for he said, I am the Son of God. The thieves also, which were crucified with him, reviled him. **L. 36** And the soldiers also mocked him, coming to him and offering him vinegar, 37 and saying, If thou be the King of the Jews, save thyself. 39 And one of the malefactors which were hanged, railed on him, 40 saying, If thou be Christ, save thyself and us. But the other answering, rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou 41 art in the same condemnation ? And we indeed justly ; for we receive the due reward of our deeds : but this man hath done 42 nothing amiss. And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me 43 when thou comest into thy kingdom. And Jesus said unto him, Verily, I say unto thee, To-day shalt thou be with me in Paradise.

Section 158.

"Behold thy Son!" Noonday Darkness. "It is finished."

MATTHEW 27 : 45-56. MARK 15 : 33-41. LUKE 23 : 44-49. JOHN 19 : 25-30,

J. 25 Now there stood by the cross of Jesus, his mother, and his mother's sister, Mary *the wife* of Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene. 26 When Jesus therefore saw his mother, and the disciple standing by whom he loved, he saith unto his mother, Woman, behold thy 27 son ! Then saith he to the disciple, Behold thy mother ! And from that hour that disciple took her unto his own *home*. Mk. 33 And when the sixth hour was come the sun was darkened, and there was darkness over all the land until the ninth hour. 34 And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani ? which is being interpreted, My God, 35 my God, why hast thou forsaken me ? And some of them that stood by, when they heard *that*, said, Behold, he calleth for Elias. J. 28 After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst. Now

- there was set a vessel full of vinegar : and straightway one of them ran, and took a sponge, and filled *it* with vinegar, and put *it* on a reed, upon hyssop, and put it to his mouth, and gave him to drink. The rest said, Let be, let us see whether Elias will come to save him, *and* take him down. When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he cried with a loud voice, It is finished. **L.** 46 And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit : and having said thus, he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.
- M. 51 And, behold, the vail of the temple was rent in twain, in the midst from the top to the bottom : and the earth did quake, and 52 the rocks rent, and the graves were opened, and many bodies of 53 the saints which slept arose, and came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.
- 54 Now when the centurion which stood over against him, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw that he so cried out and gave up the ghost, *and* saw the earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly. And the centurion glorified God, saying, Certainly this was a righteous man ; truly this man was the Son of God. **L.** 48 And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their 49 breasts and returned. And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee ministering unto him, stood afar off, beholding these things : among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the less and of Joses, and Salome the mother of Zebedee's children : and many other women which came up with him unto Jerusalem.

Section 159.

His Side pierced. His Body laid in the Sepulchre. Watch set.

MATTHEW 27 : 57-66. MARK 15 : 42-47. LUKE 23 : 50-56. JOHN 19 : 31-42.

- J. 31 THE Jews therefore, because it was the preparation (that is, the day before the sabbath), and the sabbath drew on, that the bodies should not remain upon the cross on the sabbath-day (for

that sabbath-day was an high day), besought Pilate that their legs
 32 might be broken, and *that* they might be taken away. Then came
 the soldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other which
 33 was crucified with him. But when they came to Jesus, and saw
 34 that he was dead already, they brake not his legs. But one of the
 soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there-
 35 out blood and water. And he that saw *it* bare record, and his
 record is true : and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might
 36 believe. For these things were done, that the scriptures should
 37 be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken. And again an-
 other scripture saith, They shall look on him whom they pierced.

Mk. 42 And after this, when the even was come, behold, there came
 43 a rich man of Arimathea, a city of the Jews, named Joseph, an
 honourable counsellor, a good man and a just ; which also himself
 waited for the kingdom of God. The same had not consented to
 the counsel and deed of them : being a disciple of Jesus, but se-
 cretly for fear of the Jews. This man went in boldly unto Pilate,
 44 and begged the body of Jesus, that he might take *it* away. And
 Pilate marvelled if he were already dead : and calling *unto him* the
 centurion, he asked him whether he had been any while dead.
 45 And when he knew *it* of the centurion, he gave *him* leave, and
 commanded the body to be delivered to Joseph. He came there-
 46 fore, and took the body of Jesus. And he bought fine linen, and
 when he had taken him down, he wrapped him in the clean linen
 cloth. J. 39 And there came also Nicodemus (which at the first
 came to Jesus by night), and brought a mixture of myrrh and
 40 aloes, about an hundred pounds *weight*. Then took they the body
 of Jesus, and wound it in the linen clothes with the spices, as the
 manner of the Jews is to bury.

41 Now in the place where he was crucified there was a garden ;
 and in the garden a new sepulchre, which was hewn out in the
 42 rock, wherein was never man yet laid. There laid they Jesus
 therefore, because of the Jews' preparation-day ; for the sepulchre
 was nigh at hand. And he rolled a great stone unto the door of
 the sepulchre, and departed.

L. 55 And the women also, which came with him from Galilee, fol-
 lowed after, and beheld the sepulchre, and how his body was laid.
 And there was Mary Magdalene and the other Mary, *the mother of*
 Joses, sitting over against the sepulchre, and they beheld where
 56 he was laid. And they returned, and prepared spices and oint-
 ments : and rested the sabbath-day, according to the command-
 ment,

M. 62 Now the next day that followed the day of the preparation,
 63 the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate, saying,
 Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive,
 64 After three days I will rise again. Command therefore that the
 sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come
 by night, and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen
 from the dead : so the last error shall be worse than the first.
 65 Pilate said unto them, Ye have a watch : go your way, make it as
 66 sure as you can. So they went and made the sepulchre sure,
 sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

Section 160.

**The Stone rolled away. Message of the Angel to the Women.
 Peter and John go to the Sepulchre.**

MATTHEW 28 : 1-8. MARK 16 : 1-8. LUKE 24 : 1-8, 12. JOHN 20 :
 1-10.

M. 2 AND, behold, there was a great earthquake : for the angel of
 the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the
 3 stone from the door, and sat upon it. His countenance was like
 4 lightning, and his raiment white as snow : and for fear of him
 the keepers did shake, and became as dead men.

Mk. 1 And when the sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and the
 other Mary, *the mother* of James, and Salome, had bought sweet
 spices, that they might come and anoint him. L. 1 Now upon
 the first *day* of the week, very early in the morning when it was
 yet dark, as it began to dawn, they came unto the sepulchre,
 bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain *others*
 with them. Mk. 3 And they said among themselves, Who shall
 4 roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulchre ? And when
 they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away : for it was
 very great.

J. 1 And Mary Magdalene seeth the stone taken away from the
 2 sepulchre. Then she runneth and cometh to Simon Peter, and to
 the other disciple whom Jesus loved.

L. 3 And they [*the other women*] entered in [*the sepulchre*] and found
 4 not the body of the Lord Jesus. And it came to pass, as they

- were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments. And they saw a young man sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment : and they were
5 affrighted. And as they were afraid, and bowed down *their* faces to the earth, the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye : be not affrighted : for I know that ye seek Jesus of Nazareth, which was crucified. Why seek ye the living among the
6 dead ? He is not here ; for he is risen, as he said : come, see the place where the Lord lay. Remember how he spake unto you
7 when he was yet in Galilee, saying, The Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again. **M.** 7 And go quickly, and tell his disciples, and Peter, that he is risen from the dead ; and, behold, he goeth before you into Galilee ; there shall ye see him, as he said
8 unto you : lo, I have told you. And they remembered his words, and they departed quickly, and fled from the sepulchre ; for they trembled and were amazed : neither said they any thing to any *man* : for they were afraid ; and with fear and great joy did run to bring his disciples word.
- J. 2 And [*Mary*] saith unto them [*Peter and John*], They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they
3 have laid him. Peter therefore went forth, and that other disciple, and came to the sepulchre. So they ran both together : and the other disciple did outrun Peter, and came first to the sepulchre. And he stooping down, *and looking in*, saw the linen
4 clothes lying ; yet went he not in. Then cometh Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth the linen
5 clothes laid by themselves : and the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a
6 place by itself. Then went in also that other disciple which came
7 first to the sepulchre, and he saw, and believed. For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again from the dead.
8 Then the disciples went away again unto their own home, wondering at that which was come to pass.
9
10

Section 161.

Appears to **Mary**, then to the other **Women**. Watch bribed.
Disciples disbelieve.

MATTHEW 28 : 9-15. MARK 16 : 9-11. LUKE 24 : 9-11. JOHN 20 :
 11-18.

Mk. 9 Now when *Jesus* was risen early the first *day* of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seven devils.

J. 11 But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping : and as she
 12 wept she stooped down *and looked* into the sepulchre ; and seeth
 two angels in white, sitting, the one at the head, and the other at
 13 the feet, where the body of *Jesus* had lain. And they say unto
 her, Woman, why weepest thou ? She saith unto them, Because
 they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have
 14 laid him. And when she had thus said, she turned herself back,
 15 and saw *Jesus* standing, and knew not that it was *Jesus*. *Jesus*
 saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou ? whom seekest thou ?
 She, supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, if
 thou have borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and
 16 I will take him away. *Jesus* saith unto her, Mary. She turned
 herself, and saith unto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master.
 17 *Jesus* saith unto her, Touch me not ; for I am not yet ascended to
 my Father : but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend
 unto my Father, and your Father ; and to my God, and your God.

Mk. 10 Mary Magdalene came to the disciples, as they mourned
 and wept, and told them that she had seen the Lord, and *that* he
 11 had spoken these things unto her. And they, when they had
 heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, believed not.

M. 9 And as they [*the other women*] went to tell his disciples, be-
 hold, *Jesus* met them, saying, All hail. And they came, and held
 10 him by the feet, and worshipped him. Then said *Jesus* unto them,
 Be not afraid : go tell my brethren, that they go into Galilee, and
 there shall they see me.

11 Now when they were going, behold, some of the watch came
 into the city, and shewed unto the chief priests all the things that
 12 were done. And when they were assembled with the elders, and
 13 had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers, say-
 ing, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him *away* while

14 we slept. And if this come to the governor's ears, we will per-
 15 suade him, and secure you. So they took the money, and did as
 they were taught : and this saying is commonly reported among
 the Jews until this day.

L. 9 And [*the women*] returned from the sepulchre, and told all
 10 these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest. It was Joanna,
 and Mary *the mother* of James, and other *women that were with*
 11 them, which told these things unto the apostles. And their words
 seemed to them as idle tales, and they believed them not.

Section 162.

Walk to Emmaus with Two Disciples.

MARK 16 : 12, 13. LUKE 24 : 13-35.

Mk. 12 AFTER that, he appeared in another form unto two of them,
 as they walked, and went into the country.

L. 13 And behold, two of them went that same day to a village
 called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem *about threescore fur-*
 14 longs. And they talked together of all these things which had
 15 happened. And it came to pass, that, while they communed *to-*
gether, and reasoned, Jesus himself drew near, and went with
 16 them. But their eyes were holden, that they should not know
 him.

17 And he said unto them, What manner of communications *are*
 18 these that ye have one to another, as ye walk, and are sad? And
 the one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering, said unto
 him, Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known
 19 the things which are come to pass there in these days? And he
 said unto them, What things? And they said unto him, Concern-
 ing Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and
 20 word before God, and all the people : and how the chief priests
 and our rulers delivered him to be condemned to death, and have
 21 crucified him. But we trusted that it had been he which should
 have redeemed Israel : and beside all this, to day is the third day
 22 since these things were done. Yea, and certain women also of
 our company made us astonished, which were early at the sepul-
 23 chre. And when they found not his body, they came, saying,

that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said that he was
 24 alive. And certain of them which were with ~~us~~, went to the sepulchre, and found *it* even so as the women had said : but him
 25 they saw not. Then he said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart
 26 to believe all that the prophets have spoken ! Ought not Christ
 27 to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory ? And
 beginning at Moses, and all the prophets, he expounded unto
 them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself.

28 And they drew nigh unto the village whither they went : and he
 29 made as though he would have gone further. But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us : for it is toward evening,
 and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them.
 30 And it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread,
 31 and blessed *it*, and brake, and gave to them. And their eyes were
 opened, and they knew him : and he vanished out of their sight.
 32 And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us
 while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us
 the scriptures ?

33 And they rose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem,
 and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with
 34 them, saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Si-
 35 mon. And they told what things *were done* in the way, and how
 he was known of them in breaking of bread. Neither believed
 they them.

Section 163.

Meets the Eleven in the Evening, and again a Week later.

MARK 16 : 14-18. LUKE 24 : 36-43. JOHN 20 : 19-29.

L. 36 AND as they thus spake, the same day at evening, being the
 first *day* of the week, when the doors were shut where the disci-
 ples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus himself as
 they sat at meat, and stood in the midst of them, and saith unto
 37 them, Peace *b*: unto you. But they were terrified and affrighted,
 and supposed that they had seen a spirit. And he upbraided
 them with their unbelief, and hardness of heart, because they be-
 38 lieved not them which had seen him after he was risen. And he
 said unto them, Why are ye troubled ? and why do thoughts arise

39 in your hearts? Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself : handle me, and see ; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones,
40 as ye see me have. And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them *his* hands, and *his* feet, and his side. Then were the disciples glad, when they saw the Lord. And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here meat ?
42 And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of an honeycomb ;
43 and he took *it*, and did eat before them.

J. 21 Then said Jesus to them again, Peace *be* unto you : as my Father hath sent me, even so send I you. **Mk.** 15 Go ye into
16 all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. He that believeth and is baptized, shall be saved ; but he that believeth
17 not shall be damned. And these signs shall follow them that believe : In my name shall they cast out devils ; they shall speak
18 with new tongues ; they shall take up serpents ; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them ; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover. **J.** 22 And when he had said this, he breathed on *them*, and saith unto them, Receive ye the
23 Holy Ghost : whosoever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them ; *and* whosoever *sins* ye retain, they are retained.

24 But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with
25 them when Jesus came. The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe.

26 And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them : *then* came Jesus, the doors being shut, and
27 stood in the midst, and said, Peace *be* unto you. Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands ; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust *it* into my side ; and be not
28 faithless, but believing. And Thomas answered and said unto
29 him, My Lord and my God. Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed : blessed *are* they that have not seen, and *yet* have believed.

Section 164.

At the Sea of Tiberias. Lovest thou Me?

MATTHEW 28 : 16. JOHN 21 : 1-24.

M. 16 THEN the eleven disciples went away into Galilee.

J. 1 After these things Jesus shewed himself again to the disciples
2 at the sea of Tiberias : and on this wise shewed he *himself*. There
were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and
Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the *sons* of Zebedee, and two
3 other of his disciples. Simon Peter saith unto them, I go a fish-
ing. They say unto him, We also go with thee. They went forth,
and entered into a ship immediately ; and that night they caught
nothing.

4 But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore ;
5 but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus. Then Jesus saith
unto them, Children, have ye any meat? They answered him,
6 No. And he said unto them, Cast the net on the right side of the
ship, and ye shall find. They cast therefore, and now they were
7 not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes. Therefore that
disciple whom Jesus loved saith unto Peter, It is the Lord. Now
when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt *his* fisher's
coat *unto him* (for he was naked), and did cast himself into the sea.
8 And the other disciples came in a little ship (for they were not
far from land, but as it were two hundred cubits) dragging the
net with fishes.

9 As soon then as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coals
10 there, and fish laid thereon, and bread. Jesus saith unto them,
11 Bring of the fish which ye have now caught. Simon Peter went
up, and drew the net to land full of great fishes, an hundred and
fifty and three : and for all there were so many, yet was not the
12 net broken. Jesus saith unto them, Come *and* dine. And none
of the disciples durst ask him, Who art thou? knowing that it
13 was the Lord. Jesus then cometh, and taketh bread, and giveth
14 them, and fish likewise. This is now the third time that Jesus
shewed himself to his disciples, after that he was risen from the
dead.

15 So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon *son*
of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these? He saith unto him,
Yea, Lord : thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him,

- 16 Feed my lambs. He saith to him again the second time, Simon *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord : thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my
 17 sheep. He saith unto him the third time, Simon *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me? Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me? And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all things ; thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith
 18 unto him, Feed my sheep. Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdest thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldest : but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry *thee* whither
 19 thou wouldest not. This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorify God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow me.
 20 Then Peter, turning about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus loved, following (which also leaned on his breast at supper, and said,
 21 Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee?). Peter seeing him, saith to Jesus, Lord, and what *shall* this man *do*? Jesus saith unto him, If I will that he tarry till I come, what *is that* to thee? Fol-
 23 low thou me. Then went this saying abroad among the brethren, that that disciple should not die : yet Jesus said not unto him, He shall not die ; but, If I will that he tarry till I come, what *is*
 24 *that* to thee? This is the disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things : and we know that his testimony is true.

Section 165.

Final Interviews in Galilee and Jerusalem.

MATTHEW 28 : 16-20. LUKE 24 : 44-49. ACTS 1 : 3-5, 8. 1 COR-
 INTHIANS 15 : 6, 7.

- M. 16 AFTER that the eleven disciples went into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them ; C. 6 *there* he was seen of about five hundred brethren at once. M. 17 And when they saw him, they worshipped him : but some doubted.
 C. 7 After that he was seen of James ; then of all the apostles :
 A. 3 to whom also he shewed himself alive, after his passion, by

many infallible proofs ; being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God.

- 4 And being assembled together with *them*, he commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which, *saith he*, ye have heard of me. **L.**
 44 And he said unto them, These *are* the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled which were written in the law of Moses, and *in* the prophets, and
 45 *in* the Psalms, concerning me. Then opened he their under-
 46 standing, that they might understand the scriptures, and said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behooved Christ to
 47 suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day : and that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among
 48 all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. And ye are witnesses of
 49 these things. And, behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you : but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high. **A.** 5 For John truly baptized with water ; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not
 8 many days hence. And ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you : and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.
- M. 18 And Jesus spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto
 19 me in heaven and in earth. Go ye, therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son,
 20 and of the Holy Ghost : teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you : and, lo, I am with you alway, *even* unto the end of the world. Amen,

Section 166.

The Ascension. Close of the Gospel.

MARK 16 : 19, 20. LUKE 24 : 50-53. JOHN 20 : 30, 31 ; 21 : 25.
 ACTS 1 : 9-12.

- L. 50 So then after the Lord had spoken these things unto them, he led them out as far as to Bethany ; and he lifted up his hands, 51 and blessed them. And it came to pass, while he blessed them,

and while they beheld, he was parted from them, and taken up ; and a cloud received him out of their sight ; and he was carried up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God.

A. 10 And while they looked steadfastly toward heaven as he went
11 up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel ; which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven ? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven.

L. 52 And they worshipped him, and returned with great joy unto Jerusalem, from the mount called Olivet, which is from Jerusalem
53 a sabbath-day's journey : and were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God.

Mk. 20 And they went forth, and preached everywhere, the Lord working with *them*, and confirming the word with signs following.
Amen.

J. 30 And many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of his
31 disciples, which are not written in this book. But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God ; and that believing ye might have life through his name.

25 And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written. Amen.

While there is a special tendency and plan in the writing of each Evangelist, the teaching of the different Gospels may be combined into a whole of marvellous symmetry and completeness. B. F. WESTCOTT.—Out of the vast array of facts and events which were crowded into the life of Jesus, the Holy Ghost leads each writer to select those which will best serve the purpose of each ; and to arrange them in accordance with his own design, now following the order of time and now departing from it. D. S. GREGORY.—No literary fact is more remarkable than that men, knowing what these writers knew, and feeling what they felt, should have given us chronicles so plain and calm. They have nothing to say as from themselves. Their narratives place us without preface and keep us without comment, among external scenes, in full view of facts, and in contact with the living person whom they teach us to know. T. D. BERNARD.—It is one testimony to the greatness of the life, that it so burned and fused itself into these men that they can do nothing but reflect it again with an unconsciousness which is higher than the highest art. There was inspiration guiding them, true, but this inspiration took, as its most powerful instrument, the overmastering might of that wonderful personality. J. KER.

TABLE TO FIND

MATTHEW.			MARK.		
CHAP.	VERSES.	SECTION.	CHAP.	VERSES.	SECTION.
I.	1-17	5	I.	1-8	12
	18-25	6		9-11	14
II.	1-12	9	12, 13	15	
	13-23	10	14	24	
III.	1-12	12	15-20	26	
	13-17	14	21-34	27	
IV.	1-11	15	35-45	28	
	12	24	II.	1-14	29
	13-22	26		15-22	60
	23-25	28	23-28	33	
V.	1-16	35	III.	1-7	33
	17-26	36		7-19	34
	27-48	37		19-30	47
VI.	1-18	38	31-35	48	
	19-34	39	IV.	1-12	54
VII.	1-20	40		13-25	55
	21-29	41	26-34	57	
VIII.	1	41	35-41	58	
	2-4	28	V.	1-21	59
	5-13	42		22-43	61
	14-17	27	VI.	1-6	62
	18-27	58		7-11	63
28-34	59	12, 13		64	
IX.	1	59	14-16	65	
	2-9	29	17-20	21	

ANY VERSE OF ANY GOSPEL.

LUKE.			JOHN.		
CHAP.	VERSES.	SECTION.	CHAP.	VERSES.	SECTION.
I.	1-25	1	I.	1-14	13
	26-38	2		15-18	14
	39-56	3		19-34	16
	57-80	4		35-51	17
II.	1-7	6	II.	1-11	18
	8-20	7		12-25	19
	21-39	8	III.	1-21	20
III.	40-52	11		22-36	21
	1-18	12	IV.	1-26	22
	19, 20	21		27-42	23
	21-23	14		43-54	24
	23-38	5	V.	1-16	30
IV.	1-13	15		17-30	31
	14-30	25		31-47	32
	31, 32	26	VI.	1-15	66
	33-41	27		16-21	67
	42-44	28		22-40	68
V.	1-11	26		41-71	69
	12-16	28	VII.	1	69
	17-28	29		2-10	83
	29-39	60		11-36	84
VI.	1-11	33	VIII.	37-53	85
	12-19	34		1-20	86
	20-26	35		21-47	87
	27-30, 32-36	37		48-59	88

MATTHEW.			MARK.		
CHAP.	VERSES.	SECTION.	CHAP.	VERSES.	SECTION.
IX.	10-17	60	VI.	21-29	65
	18-26	61		30-46	66
	27-38	62		47-56	67
X.	1	63	VII.	1-23	70
	2-4	34		24-37	71
	5-23	63	VIII.	1-10	72
XI.	24-42	64		11-21	73
	1	64		22-30	74
	2-6	43	IX.	31-38	75
XII.	7-19	44		1	75
	20-30	45		2-13	76
	1-15	33	X.	14-30	77
XIII.	15-21	34		31-33	78
	22-37	47		33-50	79
	38-50	48	XI.	1	100
XIV.	1-17	54		2-16	111
	18-23	55		17-31	112
XV.	24-30	56	XII.	32-45	114
	31-36	57		46-52	115
	36-43	56		1-10	118
XVI.	44-53	57	XIII.	11-14	119
	54-58	62		15-26	120
	1, 2	65		27-33	121
XVII.	3-5	21	XIV.	1-12	122
	6-12	65		13-17	124

LUKE.			JOHN.		
CHAP.	VERSES.	SECTION.	CHAP.	VERSES.	SECTION.
VI.	31, 37-45	40	IX.	1-23	91
	45-49	41		24-38	92
VII.	1-10	42	X.	39-41	93
	11-23	43		1-10	93
	24-35	44		11-21	94
	36-50	46		22-42	95
VIII.	1-3	46	XI.	1-16	96
	4-10	54		17-31	97
	11-18	55		32-46	98
	19-21	48		47-54	99
	22-25	58	XII.	55-57	117
	26-40	59		1-11	117
	41-56	61		12-19	118
				20-36	128
IX.	1-5	63	XIII.	37-50	129
	6	64		1-17	137
	7-9	65		18-30	138
	10-17	66		31-38	139
	18-21	74	XIV.	1-14	141
	22-27	75		15-31	142
	28-36	76	XV.	1-11	143
	37-43	77		12-27	144
	43-45	78	XVI.	1-15	145
	46-50	79		16-33	146
	51-56	83	XVII.	1-12	147
	57-62	58			

MATTHEW.			MARK.		
CHAP.	VERSES.	SECTION.	CHAP.	VERSES.	CTION.
XIV.	13-23	66	XII.	18-27	125
	24-36	67		28-37	126
XV.	1-20	70		38-40	127
	21-29	71		41-44	128
	29-39	72	XIII.	1-13	130
XVI.	1-12	73		14-32	131
	13-20	74		33-37	132
	21-28	75	XIV.	1, 2	136
XVII.	1-13	76		3-9	117
	14-21	77		10-16	136
	22-27	78		17	137
XVIII.	1-9	79		18-21	138
	10-20	80		22-25	140
	21-35	81		26	149
XIX.	1, 2	100		27-31	139
	3-15	111		32-42	149
	16-30	112		43-52	150
XX.	1-16	113		53	152
	17-28	114		54	151
	29-34	115		55-65	152
XXI.	1-9	118		66-72	151
	10, 11	119	XV.	1-5	153
	12, 13	120		6-15	154
	14-19	119		15-19	155
	20-22	120		20-23	156

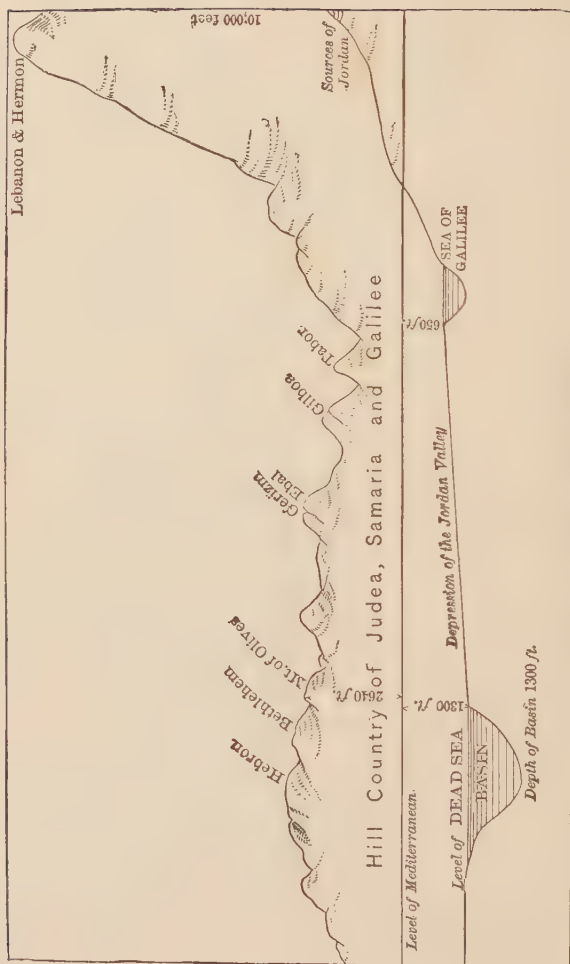
LUKE.			JOHN.		
CHAP.	VERSES.	SECTION.	CHAP.	VERSES.	SECTION.
X.	1-16	82	XVII.	13-26	148
	17-37	89	XVIII.	1	149
	38-42	90		2-12	150
XI.	1-13	90		13-18	151
	14, 15	47		19-24	152
	16	48		25-27	151
	17-23	47		28-38	153
	24-36	48		39, 40	154
	37-54	49	XIX.	1-16	155
XII.	1-21	50		16-18	156
	22-40	51		19-24	157
	41-59	52		25-30	158
XIII.	1-9	53		31-42	159
	10-21	100	XX.	1-10	160
	22-35	101		11-18	161
XIV.	1-14	102		19-29	163
	15-35	103		30, 31	166
XV.	1-10	104	XXI.	1-24	164
	11-32	105		25	166
XVI.	1-18	106		Acts I, 3-5, 8	165
	19-31	107		Acts I, 9-12	166
XVII.	1-10	108		1 Cor. XV, 6, 7	165
	11-19	83		1 Cor. XI, 23-26	140
	20-37	109			
XVIII.	1-14	110			

MATTHEW.			MARK.		
CHAP.	VERSES.	SECTION.	CHAP.	VERSES.	SECTION.
XXI.	23-32	121	XV.	24, 26	157
	33-46	122		25, 27, 28	156
XXII.	1-14	123		29-32	157
	15-22	124		33-41	158
	23-33	125		42-47	159
	34-46	126	XVI.	1-8	160
XXIII.	1-39	127		9-11	161
XXIV.	1-14	130		12, 13	162
	15-36	131		14-18	163
	37-51	132		19, 20	166
XXV.	1-13	133			
	14-30	134			
	31-46	135			
XXVI.	1-5	136			
	6-13	117			
	14-19	136			
	20	137			
	21-25	138			
	26-29	140			
	30	149			
	31-35	139			
	36-46	149			
	47-56	150			
	57	152			
	58	151			

LUKE.			JOHN.		
CHAP.	VERSES.	SECTION.	CHAP.	VERSES.	SECTION.
XVIII.	15-17	111			
	18-30	112			
	31-34	114			
	35-43	115			
XIX.	1-10	115			
	11-28	116			
	29-40	118			
	41-44	119			
	45-48	120			
XX.	1-9	121			
	10-19	122			
	20-26	124			
	27-39	125			
	40-44	126			
	45-47	127			
XXI.	1-4	128			
	5-19	130			
	20-33	131			
	34-36	132			
	37, 38	120			
XXII.	1-13	136			
	14-18	137			
	19-20	140			
	21-23	138			
	24-27	137			

MATTHEW.			MARK.		
CHAP.	VERSES.	SECTION.	CHAP.	VERSES.	SECTION.
XXVI.	59-68	152			
	69-75	151			
XXVII.	1-14	153			
	15-26	154			
	26-30	155			
	31-34	156			
	35-37	157			
	38	156			
	39-44	157			
	45-56	158			
	57-66	159			
XXVIII.	1-8	160			
	9-15	161			
	16-20	165			

LUKE.			JOHN.		
CHAP.	VERSES.	SECTION.	CHAP.	VERSES.	SECTION.
XXII.	28-30	138			
	31-38	139			
	39-46	149			
	47-53	150			
	54-62	151			
	63-71	152			
XXIII.	1-5	153			
	6-25	154			
	26-34	156			
	34-43	157			
	44-49	158			
	50-56	159			
XXIV.	1-8	160			
	9-11	161			
	12	160			
	13-35	162			
	36-43	163			
	44-49	165			
	50-53	166			



SOUTH AND NORTH PROFILE SECTION.

Showing elevations in Judea, Samaria, and Galilee, including Mount Hermon; also the depression of the Jordan River and Valley, and the basins of the Dead Sea and the Sea of Galilee. This outline is also greatly exaggerated, for the more impressive exhibition of the relative heights and depths.

ALTITUDES AND DEPTHS. (*Van de Velde.*)

	Above Sea-level.	Below Sea-level.
Jerusalem.....	2,642 feet.	
Nazareth.....	1,265 "	
Horns of Hattin.....	1,191 "	Lake of Gennesaret, or Sea of Galilee..... 653 feet, (Greatest depth of this Sea, 160 feet.)
Tabor.....	2,017 "	
Carmel.....	1,861 "	The Dead Sea..... 1,292 feet. (Greatest depth, according to Lynch, 1,308 feet.)
Cesarea Philippi (Banias Castle, 2,200 feet)	1,200 "	
Damascus.....	2,400 "	
Hermon.....	9,058 "	
Lebanon.....	10,061 "	
Hasbeiya source of Jordan.	1,700 "	
Banias "	1,200 "	
Dan "	647 "	
Merom or Hoolah Lake.....	180 "	



THE PLAIN OF GENNESARET—BEYOND MAGDALA.

226
B98
Butler, J. Glenworth

AUTHOR

The fourfold gospel.

TITLE

6166

226 .
B98

6166

Lincoln Christian College & Seminary
226B98 C001
THE FOURFOLD GOSPEL\$ LONDON



3 4711 001084443